



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



## Über dieses Buch

Dies ist ein digitales Exemplar eines Buches, das seit Generationen in den Regalen der Bibliotheken aufbewahrt wurde, bevor es von Google im Rahmen eines Projekts, mit dem die Bücher dieser Welt online verfügbar gemacht werden sollen, sorgfältig gescannt wurde.

Das Buch hat das Urheberrecht überdauert und kann nun öffentlich zugänglich gemacht werden. Ein öffentlich zugängliches Buch ist ein Buch, das niemals Urheberrechten unterlag oder bei dem die Schutzfrist des Urheberrechts abgelaufen ist. Ob ein Buch öffentlich zugänglich ist, kann von Land zu Land unterschiedlich sein. Öffentlich zugängliche Bücher sind unser Tor zur Vergangenheit und stellen ein geschichtliches, kulturelles und wissenschaftliches Vermögen dar, das häufig nur schwierig zu entdecken ist.

Gebrauchsspuren, Anmerkungen und andere Randbemerkungen, die im Originalband enthalten sind, finden sich auch in dieser Datei – eine Erinnerung an die lange Reise, die das Buch vom Verleger zu einer Bibliothek und weiter zu Ihnen hinter sich gebracht hat.

## Nutzungsrichtlinien

Google ist stolz, mit Bibliotheken in partnerschaftlicher Zusammenarbeit öffentlich zugängliches Material zu digitalisieren und einer breiten Masse zugänglich zu machen. Öffentlich zugängliche Bücher gehören der Öffentlichkeit, und wir sind nur ihre Hüter. Nichtsdestotrotz ist diese Arbeit kostspielig. Um diese Ressource weiterhin zur Verfügung stellen zu können, haben wir Schritte unternommen, um den Missbrauch durch kommerzielle Parteien zu verhindern. Dazu gehören technische Einschränkungen für automatisierte Abfragen.

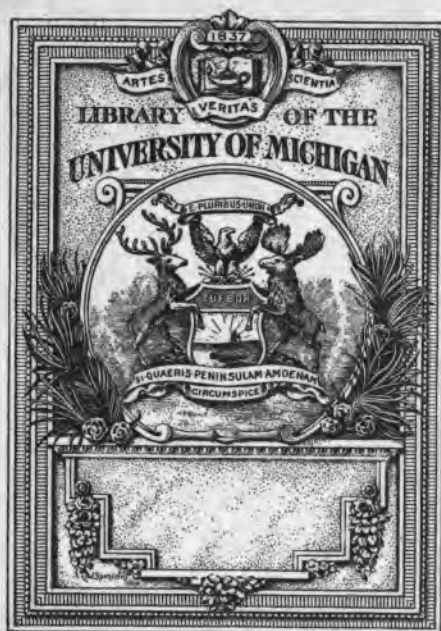
Wir bitten Sie um Einhaltung folgender Richtlinien:

- + *Nutzung der Dateien zu nichtkommerziellen Zwecken* Wir haben Google Buchsuche für Endanwender konzipiert und möchten, dass Sie diese Dateien nur für persönliche, nichtkommerzielle Zwecke verwenden.
- + *Keine automatisierten Abfragen* Senden Sie keine automatisierten Abfragen irgendwelcher Art an das Google-System. Wenn Sie Recherchen über maschinelle Übersetzung, optische Zeichenerkennung oder andere Bereiche durchführen, in denen der Zugang zu Text in großen Mengen nützlich ist, wenden Sie sich bitte an uns. Wir fördern die Nutzung des öffentlich zugänglichen Materials für diese Zwecke und können Ihnen unter Umständen helfen.
- + *Beibehaltung von Google-Markenelementen* Das "Wasserzeichen" von Google, das Sie in jeder Datei finden, ist wichtig zur Information über dieses Projekt und hilft den Anwendern weiteres Material über Google Buchsuche zu finden. Bitte entfernen Sie das Wasserzeichen nicht.
- + *Bewegen Sie sich innerhalb der Legalität* Unabhängig von Ihrem Verwendungszweck müssen Sie sich Ihrer Verantwortung bewusst sein, sicherzustellen, dass Ihre Nutzung legal ist. Gehen Sie nicht davon aus, dass ein Buch, das nach unserem Dafürhalten für Nutzer in den USA öffentlich zugänglich ist, auch für Nutzer in anderen Ländern öffentlich zugänglich ist. Ob ein Buch noch dem Urheberrecht unterliegt, ist von Land zu Land verschieden. Wir können keine Beratung leisten, ob eine bestimmte Nutzung eines bestimmten Buches gesetzlich zulässig ist. Gehen Sie nicht davon aus, dass das Erscheinen eines Buchs in Google Buchsuche bedeutet, dass es in jeder Form und überall auf der Welt verwendet werden kann. Eine Urheberrechtsverletzung kann schwerwiegende Folgen haben.

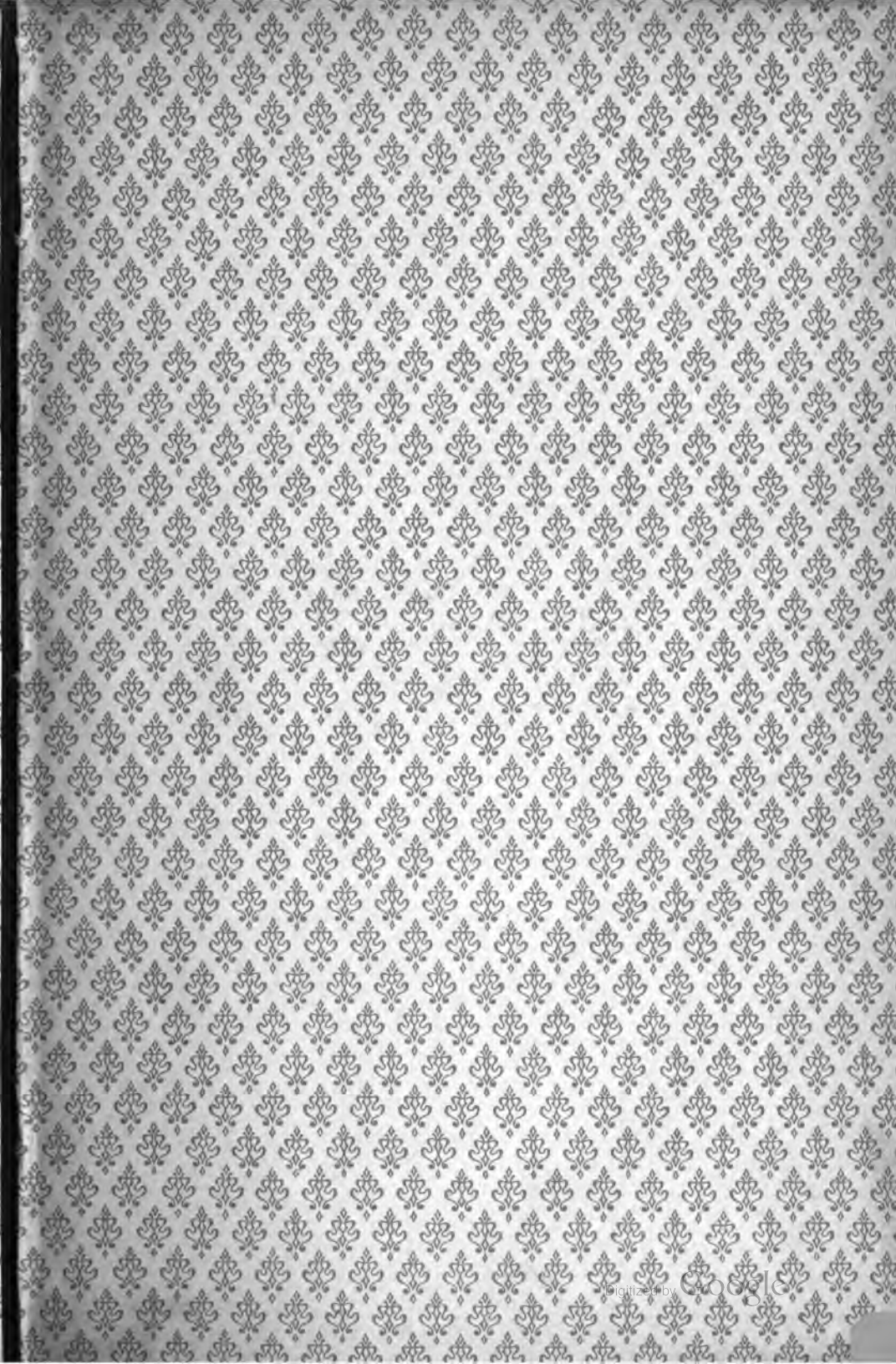
## Über Google Buchsuche

Das Ziel von Google besteht darin, die weltweiten Informationen zu organisieren und allgemein nutzbar und zugänglich zu machen. Google Buchsuche hilft Lesern dabei, die Bücher dieser Welt zu entdecken, und unterstützt Autoren und Verleger dabei, neue Zielgruppen zu erreichen. Den gesamten Buchtext können Sie im Internet unter <http://books.google.com> durchsuchen.











820.6

S93

W.8

**STUDIEN**  
**ZUR**  
**ENGLISCHEN PHILOGIE**

**HERAUSGEGEBEN**

**VON**

**LORENZ MORSBACH**

**O. Ö. PROFESSOR AN DER UNIVERSITÄT GÖTTINGEN**

---

**HEFT VIII**

**H. S. MAC GILLIVRAY, PH.D. (GOETTINGEN):**  
**THE INFLUENCE OF CHRISTIANITY ON THE**  
**VOCABULARY OF OLD ENGLISH**

---

**HALLE A. S.**  
**MAX NIEMEYER**

**1902**



# THE INFLUENCE OF CHRISTIANITY

ON THE

## VOCABULARY OF OLD ENGLISH

126765

BY

**H. S. MAC GILLIVRAY, PH.D. (GOETTINGEN)**

---

PART I (1ST HALF)

---

HALLE A. S.  
**MAX NIEMEYER**

1902



**Dedicated**

**to**

**Professor Lorenz Morsbach, Ph.D.**



## Contents.

---

	page
Preface . . . . .	IX
Sources . . . . .	XIV
Literature . . . . .	XVIII
Abbreviations . . . . .	XXI
Historical Sketch . . . . .	XXIV
<i>Chapter 1.</i> Divisions of the Human Race . . . . .	1
<i>Chapter 2.</i> The departed members of the Church . . . . .	33
<i>Chapter 3.</i> The Ecclesiastical Offices . . . . .	67
<i>Chapter 4.</i> 1. Ecclesiastical Dress . . . . .	129
<i>Chapter 4.</i> 2. Revenues of the Church . . . . .	142
<i>Chapter 4.</i> 3. Conclusion . . . . .	148
Index . . . . .	159

---





## Preface.

---

In undertaking the present investigation of the vocabulary of the Anglo-Saxon language I have not been entirely without predecessors. Similar researches have been attempted by various scholars: Gothic has been treated by *Karl Weinhold* in the little pamphlet entitled „Die gotische Sprache im Dienste des Christentums,“ Halle 1870; Old High German, by *R. Raumer* in the third book of his „Die Einwirkung des Christentums auf die althochdeutsche Sprache,“ Stuttgart 1845; in late years, Old Norse, by *Bernhard Kahle* — „Die altnordische Sprache im Dienste des Christentums.“ I. Teil: Die Prosa. *Acta Germanica* I, 4. Berlin 1890. — The second part of this Essay appeared 1900 in *Arkiv f. Nordisk Fil.* N. F. 13 and bears the title: „Das Christentum in der altwestnordischen Dichtung,“ and in part also by *Taranger* in his work „Den Angelsaksiske Kirkes Inflydelse paa den Norske.“ Kristiania 1890.

In the field of English no work of this nature has, to my knowledge, as yet appeared.

The fact that my undertaking is no new one, but, on the contrary, has been preceded by similar works in related fields would seem greatly to lighten the accomplishment of the task. This supposition is also to a certain extent correct. Particularly in the dividing and grouping of the materials I have followed my predecessors *Raumer* and *Kahle* closely; in other respects, however, I soon saw myself compelled to adopt independent methods.

No one of the above cited authors had, to my mind, treated the theme anything like as exhaustively as the subject demanded. In the lists of words and expressions cited it was often hard to see precisely wherein the influence of Christianity consisted; and the reader was forced to a continual use of the dictionary to supply the deficiency.

Furthermore no trace of an exposition of the historical development of a word or expression within the language in question was to be observed; in short the entire treatment seemed to me much too brief and rudimentary.

Starting out with the intention of reading only the more important Anglo-Saxon monuments, I soon found it desirable for even a tolerably complete presentation of my subject to include within the scope of the investigation every work of any importance in the language. This, of course, much increased the bulk of preparatory work.

I had hoped to complete the whole as a dissertation; but have been compelled by the increased amount of the materials collected to abandon this purpose and publish at the present a work equal to about one third of the entire undertaking.

I trust to be enabled at a future date to complete the remaining parts of the work.

Part I. discusses the Church in its entirety; i. e. treats all words and expressions relating to the divisions of the human race, the departed members of the Church, secular and monastic clergy, ecclesiastical dress and revenues, ecclesiastical edifices, holy times and seasons, divine service, and the Bible. Part II. will discuss belief and whatsoever is connected therewith; e. g. various religious conceptions and abstract ideas, God, the Trinity, philosophical notions of the world, sin, penance, confession, etc.

For the second part much material has already been collected.

It has not been found advisable to treat prose and poetry separately, there being too few variations in the poetic usage from that of the prose; where such occur they have been noted.

In the first part the nature of the case demands that the prose element receive the greater prominence, while in the

parts to follow the poetic element will for the same reason be the more emphasized.

Wherever feasible I have, of course, made full use of such Latin and other texts as form the sources of the Saxon monuments. For the editions used the reader is referred to the alphabetical list of works.

With reference to borrowings the following is to be noted:

The main difficulty presented itself in the classification of those terms which were received into the language after the emigration to Great Britain and before the introduction of Christianity (450—600).

Since the appearance of Pogatscher's excellent work: „Zur Lautlehre der griechischen, lateinischen und romanischen Lehnworte im Altenglischen," Strassburg 1888, the question of the existence of a Brito-Roman dialect in the island of Great Britain after the withdrawal of the Romans appeared to be settled, the author's arguments in favor of the same seeming conclusive enough.

Of late, however, the problem has been revived and new light been thrown upon the question by the publication of a little work by a French scholar, M. Loth, entitled: „Les mots latins dans les langues brittoniques, etc.," Paris 1892.

Loth's conclusions are directly antipodal to Pogatscher's, his view being that the Latin language became extinct with the disappearance of the Roman legions from the island and that all borrowed words in O. E. bearing the evidence of the Romance sound-shift were later importations from the Continent.

A careful perusal of Loth's essay has led me to the conclusion that the existence of a special British-Roman dialect is, at best, very uncertain.

In his rejoinder („Angelsachsen und Romanen." Engl. Stud. XIX, p. 3 et seq.) to Loth's attack Pogatscher himself admits that it will not hereafter be admissible to refer to Britain as a thoroughly romanized province („Brittanien ist nie assimiliert worden; die lateinische Sprache ist dort nie Nationalsprache geworden."), but he — properly enough —

takes offence at the positiveness of his opponents' tone and thinks that many shades are possible between the non-existence of the Latin as the national tongue of the Britons and its entire non-existence among them, for instance among the inhabitants of the municipalities.<sup>1)</sup>

Still, plausible as P.'s argument may seem,<sup>2)</sup> it proves merely the possibility of the existence, for a few generations, of a Romance dialect in the island of Britain. That such a dialect really existed is by no means proved; and as the presence of Romance borrowings in A.-S. is easily explained by the safer theory of importation from the Continent, we shall do best to designate them accordingly.<sup>3)</sup>

A tabulation of my chief results will be found at the end of the work.

It is to be regretted that the scope of the undertaking has prevented me, for the present, from reaching definite results as to several questions of philological interest. Such questions as the following I hope to answer later:

What terms did the Anglo-Saxons alone possess?

Which did they receive, or might they have received from other languages?

Which did they probably give to other languages?

What would an agreement between the West Germanic languages and Old Norse indicate?

As regards citations, I have always given full lists of examples excepting only such instances where the word or expression was very frequent, in which cases a note to that effect has been inserted.

The marks of quantity, as far as the O. E. words are concerned, follow the rules laid down by Morsbach in his „Mittelenglische Grammatik“ (Vorwort, p. VIII).

<sup>1)</sup> According to P. it was from the cities and towns that the conquerors drew their supply of Romance vocables.

<sup>2)</sup> Cf. also Sievers, *Zum angelsächsischen Vocalismus*. Leipzig 1900. p. 3 et seq. Morsbach.

<sup>3)</sup> The Christian-Latin borrowings existing in O. E. of this period exhibit no peculiarities which would call for a special Brito-Roman dialect. It is to be remembered, however, that the Romance dialects did not begin to be developed at all before the period referred to.

In conclusion it gives me great pleasure to acknowledge my obligations to the friends who by word and deed have aided in the accomplishment of my task. Especial gratitude is due to my honored teacher, Prof. Morsbach of the University of Goettingen, whose valuable advice has never failed me in the preparation of this little work. I am also indebted to Pres. William R. Harper of the University of Chicago for having courteously extended to me the use of the University libraries this summer; and I feel sincerely grateful to my friends Dr. Heinrich Spies and Dr. Fritz Roeder who have undertaken the arduous task of correcting the proofs.

M. Clellanville S.C.  
September, 1900.

H. S. Mac Gillivray.

## Sources.

---

- Bruno Assmann*, Angelsächsische Homilien und Heiligenleben. Grein's Bibliothek der A. S. Prosa III. Kassel 1889.
- W. De Gray Birch*, Cartularium Saxonie etc. 3 vols. London 1885—1893.
- John of Bolland*, Acta Sanctorum etc. Antwerp. 1643 et seqq.
- C. W. Bouterwek*, Angelsächsische Glossen. Z. f. d. A. IX, p. 401 et seqq.
- Edw. Breck*, Fragment of Ælfrie's Translation of Ethelwold's De Consuetudine Monachorum etc. Leipzig, Diss. 1887.
- Pietro Cacciari*, Rufini Eusebii Historia Ecclesiastica. Rome 1741.
- O. Cockayne*, Leechdoms, Wortcunning and Starcraft of Early England. 3 vols. Roll Series. 1864—1866.
- , Narratiunculæ Anglice Conscriptæ. London 1861.
- J. Earle*, A Hand-Book to the Land Charters and other Saxonie Documents, Oxford 1888.
- Earle-Plummer*, Two of the Saxon Chronicles etc. On the basis of the Edition of John Earle, by C. Plummer. 2 vols. Oxford 1892—1899.
- J. A. Fabricius*, Codex Apocryphus Novi Testamenti. Hamburg 1719.
- J. A. Giles*, Sancti Aldhelmi Opera etc. I. Oxonii MDCCCXLIV.
- , The Complete Works of Bede. 6 vols. London 1843.
- Gregory the Great*, Cura Pastoralis (Migne, Patrologia Latina 77, 3).
- Gregory of Tours*, Gesta Francorum (Monumenta Germ. hist. Scriptores rerum Merovingicarum I, 2, Hannover 1885).
- C. W. M. Grein*, Ælfrie de Vetere et Novo Testamento, Pentateuch etc. Bibl. der A. S. Prosa I. Kassel und Goett. 1872.



- C. W. M. Grein*, Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Poesie. 2 vols. Göttingen 1857—1858.
- Grein-Wülker*, Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Poesie. Kassel 1881 et seqq.
- Charles Hardwick*, The Gospel according to St. Matthew in Anglosaxon and Northumbrian Versions. Cambridge 1858.
- G. Herzfeld*, Bruchstück einer ae. Legende. Engl. Stud. XIII, p. 142 et seqq.
- W. Hulme*, „Blooms“ von König Alfred. Engl. Stud. XVIII, p. 331 et seq.
- , The O. E. Gospel of Nicodemus. Publications of the Modern Language Association. New Series VI, 1898, pp. 457—542.
- J. M. Kemble*, Codex Diplomaticus Aevi Saxonici. 6 vols. London 1839—1848.
- , The Dialogue of Salomon and Saturnus. Ælfrie Society, 8. London 1848.
- F. Kluge*, Angelsächsische Excerpte aus Byrhtferth's Handbōc oder Enchiridion etc. Anglia VIII, p. 298 et seq.
- F. Liebermann*, Die Gesetze der Angelsachsen. I. (1, 2) Bd. Halle 1898—1899.
- H. Logeman*, Anglo-Saxonica Minora. Anglia XI, p. 97 et seq.; XII, p. 497 et seq.
- , New Aldhelm Glosses. Anglia XIII, p. 26 et seq.
- , Anglo-Saxon and Latin Rule of St. Benet. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 90, 1888.
- W. S. Logeman*, De Consuetudine Monachorum. Anglia XIII, pp. 365 et seqq.
- G. E. Mac Lean*, Alfric's Version of Alcuini Interrogationes Sigeuulfi in Genesin. Anglia VI, 425 et seq.; VII, 1 et seq.
- Migne*, Patrologia Latina. 1866 ff.
- Thos. Miller*, The Old English Version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History of the English People. Part I, E. E. T. S. Or. Series 95, 96. 1890—91. Part II, 1898.
- B. Mombritius*, Sanctuarium sive Vitae Sanctorum. Mediol. 1474.
- F. J. Mone*, Glossen zum Prudentius. Mones' Anzeiger 8, 1839.
- R. Morris*, The Blickling Homilies of the Tenth Century. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 58, 63, 73. London 1874—80.

- A. Napier*, Altenglische Glossen. Engl. Stud. XI, 62 et seq.  
 —, Altenglische Glossen zu Isidor's contra Judaeos etc. Engl. Stud. XIII, 25 et seq.  
 —, Old English Glosses. Anecdota Oxon. Med. and Mod. Series, Part XI. Oxford 1900.  
 —, Ein altenglisches Leben des Hl. Chad. Anglia X, 131 et seq.  
 —, Altenglische Kleinigkeiten. Anglia XI, 1 et seq.  
 —, Nachträge zu Cook's Biblical Quotations in O. E. prose writers. Herrig's Archiv 101, pp. 309—324.  
 —, Wulfstan. Sammlung der ihm zugeschriebenen Homilien etc. Erste Abt. Berlin 1883.  
*Napier-Stevenson*, Anecdota Oxoniensia, etc. Part VII. Oxford 1895.  
*Rudolf Peiper*, A. M. S. Boetii Philosophiae Consolationis Libri Quinque. Lipsiae MDCCCLXXI.  
*E. W. Rhodes*, Defensor's Liber Scintillarum. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 93. 1889.  
*Jacob Schipper*, König Alfred's Übersetzung von Beda's Kirchengeschichte. Bibliothek der ags. Prosa. IV. Bd., erste Hälfte. Leipzig 1897.  
*Reinhold Schmid*, Die Gesetze der Angelsachsen. 2. Auflage. Leipzig 1858.  
*A. Schröer*, De Consuetudine Monachorum. Engl. Stud. IX, 290 et seq.  
 —, Die ags. Prosabearbeitung der Benedictinerregel. Bibl. d. ags. Prosa II. Kassel 1885.  
 —, Die Winteney Version der Regula Sancti Benedicti. Halle 1898.  
*W. J. Sedgefield*, King Alfred's O. E. Version of Boetius etc. Oxford 1899.  
*W. W. Skeat*, Ælfric's Metrical Lives of the Saints. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 76, 82, 94. 1881—1890.  
 —, The Holy Gospels in Anglo-Saxon, Northumbrian and Old Mercian Versions. 3 vols. Cambridge 1871—1887.  
*E. Steinmeyer*, Lateinische und altenglische Glossen. Z. f. d. A. 33, 242 et seqq.  
*J. Stevenson*, Rituale Ecclesiae Dunelmensis. Surtees Society. London 1840.  
*L. Surius*, Vitae Sanctorum. 6 vols. Cologne 1570—1575.

- Henry Sweet*, King Alfred's Orosius. Part I. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 1883.
- , King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 45, 50. 1871—1872.
- , The Oldest English Texts, Charters, etc. E. E. T. S. Or. Series 83.
- Benj. Thorpe*, Ancient Laws and Institutes of England. London 1840.
- , The Homilies of the Anglo-Saxon Church. 2 vols. Alfrie Society. London 1843.
- , Diplomatarium Anglicum Ævi Saxonici. London 1865.
- Const. Tischendorf*, Evangelia Apocrypha. Lipsiae 1876. 2. Edit.
- M. H. Turk*, The Legal Code of Alfred the Great. Halle 1893.
- Wright-Wülker*, Anglo-Saxon and Old English Vocabularies. 2 Vols. London 1884.
- J. Zupitza*, Altenglische Glossen. Z. f. d. A. 33, 237—242.
- , Die Glossen zu Abbo's Clericorum Decus. Z. f. d. A. 31, 1—27.
- , Ein weiteres Bruchstück der Regularis Concordia in Altengl. Sprache. Herrig's Archiv 84, 1—24.

## Literature.

---

- W. Arnold*, Deutsche Geschichte. 2. Band: Fränkische Zeit. Gotha 1883.
- W. Bode*, Die Kenningar in der Ags. Dichtung etc. Diss. Strassburg 1886.
- J. Bosworth*, Dictionary of the Anglo-Saxon Language. London, Oxford and Cambridge 1838.
- Bosworth-Toller*, An Anglo-Saxon Dictionary Based on the manuscript collections of the late J. Bosworth. Oxford 1882—98.
- Cleasby-Vigfusson*, An Icelandic-English Dictionary Based on the Ms. collections of R. Cleasby etc. by G. Vigfusson. Oxford 1874.
- Encyclopædia Britannica*, 9th Ed. Arb. „Monachism“. Vol. 16, pp. 698—717.
- L. Ettmüller*, Vorda Vealhstod Engla and Seaxna. Lexicon Anglo-Saxonicum. Quedlinburg and Leipzig 1851.
- C. C. Ferrel*, Teutonic Antiquities in the Anglosaxon Genesis. Diss. Leipzig, Halle 1893.
- Max Förster*, Über die Quellen von Ælfric's Homiliae Catholicae. I. Legenden. Diss. Berlin 1892.
- , Zu den Blickling Homilien. Herrig's Archiv 91, pp. 179 bis 206.
- J. Fritzenr*, Ordbog over det gamle norske Sprog. 3 Vols. Kristiania 1886—1896.
- J. H. Gallee*, Altsächische Sprachdenkmäler. Leyden 1894 (cf. Wadstein below).
- W. Golther*, Handbuch der Germanischen Mythologie. Leipzig 1895.

- C. W. M. Grein*, Sprachschatz der ags. Dichter in Bibl. der Ags. Poesie. 2 vols. Cassel and Göttingen 1861—64.
- Jacob Grimm*, Deutsche Mythologie. 4. Aufl. Berlin 1875—78.
- Clark Hall*, A Concise Anglo-Saxon Dictionary. London 1894.
- N. James*, Die Englische Kirche in ihrem Verhältnis zum Papst- und Königtum etc. Diss. Halle 1893.
- G. Jansen*, Beiträge zur Synonymik und Poetik der allgemein als ächt anerkannten Dichtungen Cynewulfs. Diss. Münster 1883.
- B. Kahle*, Die altnordische Sprache im Dienste des Christentums. Acta Germanica I, 4. Berlin 1890.
- , Das Christentum in der altwestnordischen Dichtung im Arkiv f. Nord. Fil. N. F. 13. 1900.
- J. M. Kemble*, The Saxons in England. 2 vols. London 1849.
- A. Köhler*, Germanische Altertümer im Beowulf. Germania XIII, 129—158.
- F. Kluge*, Etymologisches Wörterbuch der Deutschen Sprache. 6. Aufl. 1899.
- Kluge-Lutz*, English Etymology. Strassburg 1898.
- F. X. Kraus*, Realencyclopädie der christlichen Altertümer. Freiburg i. B. 1882.
- H. Leo*, Angelsächsisches Glossar. Halle 1877.
- J. Lingard*, The History and Antiquities of the Anglosaxon Church. 2 vols. London 1845.
- J. Loth*, Les Mots latins dans les langues brittoniques etc. avec une introduction sur la romanisation de l'île de Bretagne. Paris 1892.
- E. Lye*, Dictionarium Saxonico- et Gothico-Latinum. Edidit Owen Manning. 2 vols. Londini 1772.
- K. Maurer*, Die Bekehrung des norwegischen Stammes zum Christentum. 2 vols. München 1855—56.
- J. A. H. Murray*, A New English Dictionary on Historical Principles etc. Oxford.
- J. H. Ott*, Über die Quellen der Heiligenleben in Ælfric's „Lives of Saints.“ I. Diss. Halle 1892.
- H. Paul*, Grundriss der germanischen Philologie. 2. Aufl. 1897 et seq.
- A. Pogatscher*, Angelsachsen und Romanen. Engl. Stud. XIX, 329—352.

- A. Pogatscher*, Zur Lautlehre der griechischen, lateinischen und romanischen Lehnworte im Altenglischen. Strassburg und London 1888.
- R. Raumer*, Die Einwirkung des Christentums auf die ahd. Sprache. Stuttgart 1845.
- K. Schemann*, Die Synonyma im Beowulfsliede etc. Diss. Münster 1882.
- Fr. Seiler*, Die Entwicklung der deutschen Cultur im Spiegel des deutschen Lehnwortes. Bd. I: Die Zeit bis zur Einführung des Christentums. Halle 1895.
- E. Sievers*, Angelsächsische Grammatik. 3. Aufl. 1898.
- , Zum angelsächsischen Vocalismus. Decanatsprogramm, Leipzig 1900.
- W. Skeat*, Etymological Dictionary of the English Language. 3rd Ed. Oxford 1898.
- W. Somner*, Dictionarium Saxonico-Latino-Saxonicum. Oxonii 1659.
- H. Sweet*, The Student's Dictionary of Anglo-Saxon. Oxford 1897.
- Taranger*, Den Angelsaksiske Kirkes Inflydelse paa den Norske. Kristiania 1890.
- A. F. C. Vilmar*, Deutsche Altertümer im Heliand. Programm, Marburg 1845.
- Elis Wadstein*, Kleine altsächsische Sprachdenkmäler m. Anm. u. Glossar. Norden und Leipzig 1899.
- K. Weinhold*, Die Gotische Sprache im Dienste des Christentums. Halle 1870.
- E. Winckelmann*, Geschichte der Angelsachsen bis zum Tode König Alfred's. Berlin 1883.
- R. P. Wülker*, Grundriss zur Geschichte der Ags. Litteratur. Leipzig 1885.
- J. Zupitza*, Zur Frage nach der Quelle von Cynewulf's Andreas. Z. f. d. A. 30, 175 et seqq.



## The Principal Abbreviations.<sup>1)</sup>

---

- Anc. Laws*, Thorpe's Ancient Laws and Institutes etc.  
*Ap.*, Fata Apostolorum in Grein's Sprachschatz = Die Schicksale der Apostel in Gr.-Wl.  
*App.*, Appendix in Schmid's Gesetze etc.  
*Ass.*, Assmann's Angelsächsische Homilien etc.  
*Ass. (Æ)*, Pieces by Ælfric in Assmann's Angelsächs. Homilien etc.  
*Ælfr.*, Ælfred, Ælfred's Ges., Laws of King Ælfred in Liebermann.  
*Ælfr. Gr.*, Grein's Ælfric de Vetere et Novo Test. etc.  
*Ælfr. Hom.*, Homilies of Ælfric in Thorpe's Homilies of the Anglosaxon Church.  
*Ælfr. Past.*, Ælfric's Pastoral in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Ælfr. Epis.*, Ælfric's Epistle entitled 'Quando dividis Chrisma' in Thorpe's Anc. L. etc.  
*Æthelb.*, Laws of King Æthelbirht in Liebermann.  
*Æthelr.*, Laws of King Æthelred in Liebermann.  
*Æthelst.*, Laws of King Æthelstan in Liebermann.  
*Bede*, Miller's edition.  
*Ben. R.*, Schröder's Die Ags. Prosabearbeitung der Benedictinerregel.  
*Ben. R. Log.*, Logeman's Rule of St. Benet.  
*Bl.*, *Blick.*, Blick. Hom., Morris's Blickling Homilies etc.  
*Boet. Sedgef.*, Sedgfield's Boetius.  
*Bos. Toll.*, The Anglo-Saxon Dictionary of Bosworth-Toller.  
*Bout.*, Bouterwek's Angelsächsische Glossen.

---

<sup>1)</sup> Abbr. of poetical pieces as in Grein's Sprachschatz, only those being given in above list whose titles differ from Grein-Wülker.

- Can. Ælfr.*, The Canons of Ælfric in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Can. Edg.*, The Canons of Edgar in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Cart. Sax.*, De Gray Birch's Cartularium Sax. etc.  
*Chad.*, Napier's Ein altengl. Leben des Hl. Chad.  
*Chr., Chron.*, Plummer's two of the Saxon Chronicles etc.  
*Cn.*, Laws of Cnut in Liebermann.  
*Cod. Dipl.*, Kemble's Codex Diplomaticus etc.  
*Con. Ecgb.*, Confessionale Ecgberti in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Cook*, Cook's Glossary etc.  
*Ct.*, Charters in Sweet's Oldest Eng. Texts.  
*De C. M.*, Logeman's De Consuetudine Monachorum.  
*Defen., Defens.*, Defensor's Liber Scintill. etc. by Rhodes.  
*De Reg. Con. Zup.*, Zupitza's Ein weiteres Bruchstück der Regularis Con. etc.  
*D. Rit.*, Stevenson's Rituale Ecclesiae Dunelm. etc.  
*Deut.*, Deuteronomy in Grein's Ælfric de Vetere et Novo Test. etc.  
*Eccl. Inst.*, Ecclesiastical Institutes in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Edg.*, Laws of Edgar in Liebermann.  
*Edm.*, Laws of Edmund in Liebermann.  
*Eadw., Eadw.*, Eadward's Laws in Liebermann.  
*Edu. (Eadw.) u. Guthr.*, (Laws of Edward and Guthrum in Schmid) 'Eadward's Gesetz nach Erwerbung von Guthrum's Gebiet' in Liebermann.  
*Exod. (Ex.) Gr.*, Exodus in Grein's Ælfric de Vetere et Novo Test. etc.  
*Fata Ap.*, Fata Apostolorum in Grein's Bibliothek = Die Schicksale der Apostel in Grein-Wülker.  
*Gr.*, Grein, Grein's Sprachschatz etc.  
*Gr.-Wl.*, Grein-Wülker's Bibliothek der Ags. Poesie etc.  
*Grd.<sup>2</sup>*, Grundriss, Paul's Grundriss der German. Philologie.  
*Hom.*, Thorpe's Homilies etc.  
*Hy.* (= 'Hymnen und Gebete' in Grein's Sprachschatz).  
*I—IV* = Gebete I—IV in Gr.-Wl.  
*Hy. V—VII* = Vater unser in Gr.-Wl.  
*Hy. VIII* = Hymnus in Gr.-Wl.  
*Hy. IX* = Gloria in Gr.-Wl.  
*Hy. X* = Glaubensbekenntnis in Gr.-Wl.  
*Hy. XI* = Bruchstück eines Lehrgedichtes in Gr.-Wl.  
*Jne*, Ine's Laws Liebermann.

- Inst. Pol.*, Institutes of Polity in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Jo., Joh.*, Gospel of John in Skeat.  
*Lev.*, Leviticus in Greins Ælfrie de Vetere etc.  
*Lind.*, Lindisfarne (Northumbrian) Gospels in Skeat.  
*Lives*, Skeats Ælfrie's Lives of the Saints.  
*Lk.*, Gospel acc. to Luke in Skeat.  
*Men.*, Menologium in Grein's Bibliothek = Heiligenkalender in Gr.-Wl.  
*Mk., Mt. (Math.)*, Gospel acc. to Mark, Matthew, in Skeat.  
*Nicod.*, Hulme's O. E. Gospel of Nicodemus etc.  
*North. Priestergesetz*, in Schmid.  
*O. E. T.*, Sweet's Oldest English Texts.  
*Oros.*, Sweet's King Alfred's Orosius.  
*Oxf. Dict.*, Murray's New Engl. Dictionary etc.  
*Past., Past C.*, Sweets King Alfred's West Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care.  
*Poen. Ecgb.*, Poenitentiale Ecgberti in Thorpe's Ancient Laws etc.  
*Pog.*, Pogatscher's Zur Lautlehre etc.  
*Rush., Rushw.*, Rushworth Gospels in Skeat.  
*Sat.*, Christ & Satan in Gr. = Die Klage der gefallenen Engel, Christi Höllenfahrt etc., Versuchung Christi in Gr.-Wl.  
*VH*, Vespasian Hymns in Sweet's O. E. T.  
*VP*, Vespasian Psalter in Sweet's O. E. T.  
*Wiht.*, Laws of Wihtræd in Liebermann.  
*Wr.-Wl.*, Wright-Wülker's A-S. and O.E. Vocabularies.  
*Wulf.*, Napier's Wulfstan etc.
-

## Historical Sketch.

---

About 148 years after the first band of Saxon invaders had landed at Thanet on the island of Britain, the monk Augustine, starting from the same point, commenced a spiritual conquest of the conquerors that in its way was no less remarkable, decisive, and weighty for the inhabitants, of the island, than had been their material and political subjugation a century and a half before.

The religion of Jesus with its doctrine of love, humility, and their sequel: subordination to priestly authority, was about to supplant a sterner creed of revenge, personal dauntlessness, and freedom from hierarchical rule. Christ was to conquer Wodan; the Twilight of the Gods had begun for England.

The landing at Thanet took place in the year of our Lord 597. In a comparatively brief time Kent was, superficially at least, christianized; and Augustine and his followers were free to push the foreposts of the Gospel further north.

The year 627 saw the conversion of King Eadwine of Northumbria by Paulinus, a zealous monk in the following of Augustine.

The most tenacious resistance to the new religion was offered by Mercia, whose King Penda (626—655) heroically upheld the dying cause of heathendom during his entire reign. Both Eadwine and his successor to the Northumbrian throne fell in battle against him.

This memorable war of religions came to an end upon the bloody field of Winwood (655), in which the aged defender of the gods was routed and slain by the Northumbrian king Oswi. During the profound peace which followed, Mercia was organized into a bishopric and given into charge of Ceadda — St. Chad — a monk of Lindisfarne, a famous foundation of the Irish church.

This brings us to the struggle for supremacy between the Roman and Irish hierarchies.

Ireland had long before been christianized by the labors of St. Patrick (about 432). Hardly half a century after his decease the Irish church began to send forth missionaries to all parts of continental Europe and even to the Picts and Scots of northern Britain.

The work of these first Irish monks should not be underestimated; for it was they who prepared the ground and strewed the first seeds of Christianity in the pathway of our Germanic forefathers, which were destined, later on under the more systematic cultivation of Rome, to bring forth such rich fruitage.

To the philologist the activity of these pioneers of the Gospel has a peculiar interest, since there can be no doubt that much of the religious and ecclesiastical terminology of the languages of Europe entered them through the medium of the early missionaries of Ireland.

Unfortunately this influence is of such a nature, philologically speaking, that we are often unable to determine positively which terms are Celtic and which are due to later evangelization.

Thus, for instance, O.E. *crīst*, Christ, which has generally been considered as derived from a Celtic source, is now assigned by Kluge (Paul's Grundriss, 2nd Ed. I, p. 359 „Anmerkung“) to Romance-Latin *Crīstus*.

The point from which the Irish Church sent forth its evangelists among the inhabitants of Britain was Jona, a cloister founded by Columba on the western coast of Scotland.

A monk of this institution Aidan, undertook the conversion of the Northumbrians, and received from their king Oswald the island of Lindisfarne for his see. From the monastery here founded zealous propagandists poured forth to the adjacent heathen, both Mercians and Northumbrians, Bishop Aidan himself taking a most prominent part.

After Christianity had become firmly established by the death of Penda (655), monasteries modelled on the Irish plan sprang up in great numbers throughout the North.

Soon, however, the young Church of the North was rent by the struggle between Ireland and Rome. This conflict continued until the year 664, when King Oswi at the Great

Council of Whitby decided for the supremacy of Rome. This ended the activity of the Irish church in England: Colman and his entire following of English and Irish monks deserted Lindisfarne and returned to Jona.

### The Conversion of the Continent and Skandinavia.

It will perhaps be of considerable assistance to the reader to have brought before him, for the sake of comparison, the most prominent facts concerning the conversion of the other Germanic tribes.

The conversion of Germany to Christianity is inseparably joined to the name of the Anglo-Saxon church and St. Boniface.

Yet, even before the advent of the great „apostle of the Germans“ many echoes of the Gospel and its adherents had penetrated the gloomy wilds of Germany: the conversion of the Goths by Bishop Ulphilas (ob. 381?) over three centuries before Boniface had been the means by which the other German tribes had acquired a rude conception of the Christian religion; for at this time a small though highly important quota of words relative to the new faith entered their language. Thus O.H.G. *Krist* (but not O.E. *crist*!),<sup>1)</sup> Christ, and O.E. *cirice*, Church, bear the stamp of Greek, i. e. Arian (Gothic) origin. Cf. also Kossinna, „Zur Gesch. d. Volksnamens Griechen“ in the „Festschrift für Weinhold“, Strassburg 1896, p. 39.

Of active missionary work among the Germans, however, almost nothing is known until the 6th century, when the Irish church began to send missionaries into South and Central Germany.

The most famous names connected with this mission are those of Saint Fridolin (ob. 530), Columbanus (ob. 615), Gallus (ob. 640) and Kilian (ob. 688).

At this point the Franks took up the work. The bishops Ruprecht of Worms (690—696), Emmeran of Poitiers (ob. 716) and others labored with success in northern Austria and Bavaria.

But to have placed the struggling Church of Germany upon a firm and lasting foundation and to have completed the

---

<sup>1)</sup> Cf. Note to § 19 Morsbach.



conversion of the country was the merit firstly of the English Church and secondly — as regards the Saxons, at least — of Charles the Great.

Willebrord of Northumbria and Boniface of Wessex are the two names chiefly associated with the labors of the A.-S. Church in Germany. The former, born about the year 658, won considerable successes among the Frisians; but the ceaseless war in which that fierce people were engaged rendered his work for the most part vain.

More enduring was the life-work of his successor Boniface (born about 682). Commissioned by Popes Gregory II. and III. for the undertaking, he succeeded, after a series of brilliant campaigns, in winning the bulk of the Germans over to Christ. His magnificent administrative abilities were then (738) displayed in the organisation of the German Church, which he carried forward with preeminent success to its conclusion.

Made Archbishop of Mayence in 747, his invincible energy refused to be chilled by a sedentary life; and so we find him once more (753) actively pushing his missionary work among the Frisians. Here he suffered martyrdom at the hands of the heathen on the 5th of June, anno 754. The last of the German tribes to accept Christianity was the Saxons, whose conversion succeeded about half a century later, upon their subjugation (772—803) by Charlemagne.

The conversion of the Skandinavian tribes took place at a much later date than that of the other Teutonic nations. The Gospel made but slow and halting advances in the face of resisting heathendom.

For this reason much of the language and literature of the heathen Norsemen has been preserved to us intact, while scarcely any traces of the heathen literature of their brethren, the Germans and the English have been handed down. Hence the unique position which the Norse tongue and Norse literature occupy in Teutonic history.

As far as the religious-ecclesiastical element of O.N. is concerned, it should be noted that it is, to a great extent, borrowed from, or moulded after, the terminology of those German tribes that, preceding the Skandinavians in their con-

\*\*

version, were thereby enabled to play to the latter the rôle of evangelists.

This applies as well to the Germans of the Continent as to the Anglo-Saxons. The influence of the former was exerted chiefly in the earlier periods of the conversion, that of the A.-S. chiefly towards its close when the political relations of Denmark and England had become intimate.

The Irish Church also exerted quite an important influence in Norway, frequent communication between Ireland and that country being established through the medium of merchants and marauding Vikings.

Without entering more nearly into the history of the conversion of the Skandinavian countries, I have added a few of the most important data containing, I trust, all that will be necessary for a full comprehension of the following pages.

#### First missionary journey to the North.

	A. D.
(Denmark) by the A.-S. Willibrord . . . . .	700
Archbishop Ebo of Rheims and Bishop Halitgar of Cambray sent by Lewis the Pious preach to the Danes.	
Danish king Harald baptized at Mayence . . . .	826
The monk Anskar („Apostle of the Skandinavians“) returns from a successful missionary journey to Sweden and becomes Bishop of Hamburg . . . . .	831
Anskar shows great ability as an evangelist and organizer.	
Wins Denmark and Sweden for Christ. Dies. . .	865
Progress of the Mission under Archbishops Unni and Adaldag . . . . .	918—988
King Hakon the Good calls A.-S. missionaries to Norway and establishes Christianity by law. Hakon dies. .	961
King Olaf Tryggvason enforces Christianity with the sword. Olaf slain . . . . .	1000
King Olaf Haraldson powerfully advances the work of his predecessors and brings it to completion. Dies.	1030

# Part I.

## The Church.

---

### Chapter 1.

#### Divisions of the Human Race.

§ 1. The sacrament of baptism separates, as the chief external characteristic, the Christians from the non-Christians; i. e. from a) the Jews and b) the heathen.

#### Jews.

In rendering Lat. *Judaeus*, pl. *Judaei* there is considerable variation in O. E.; we find strong as well as weak, popular as well as learned, forms.

The following list will illustrate:

§ 2. A favorite mode of designating sect or nationality in O. E. is by the use of adjectives, or substantive adjectives, ending in *-isc*.

Thus the Hebrews are denoted by the phrase „*ðæt Ebrēisce folc*.“ Ælfric Hom. I, 24; 11; cf. also *Ebr(ē)isc*,<sup>1)</sup> *Ebr(ē)isc geðrōd*, the Hebrew tongue:

*gehāten Galað on Ebrēisc*. Past. 367; 5. *on Ebrēisc geðrōde*, „in Hebrew.“ Past. 6; 1.

Past. 205; 7 the Hebrews are called „*ðā Ebrēas*,“ corresponding to“ (*ðā*) *Jūdēas*,“ the Jews (vid. below).

---

<sup>1)</sup> For *Ebrisc* by the side of *Ebrēisc* see *Iudisc*, § 3 Note 2.

The Hebrews as „*Israel*,“ „the Children of Israel,“ etc.

The following expressions are recorded:

„*Israhēl*“ (Lat. *Israel*) str. m., or the plur. „*Israhēle*,“  
-a, -um:

*Nāt ic þone Drihten, and ic Israhēl ne forlæte.* Hom. II, 192; 16. Similar: 192; 15, 29. 212. 10. 222; 14. 230; 7, etc.

*swā swā sē éalda Israhēl neadunge hēold* (sc. *godes gelaðunge*) *on hæftnunge.* Hom. II, 86; 3.

*sē heretoga Jesus gelædde þone éaldan Israhēl tō þām éarðe ðē him behāten wæs.* Hom. II, 214; 26. Further: 218; 25, 264; 28, etc.

*hē forget ðone frēondscipe wið Israhēle* („towards the Israelites“). Past. 423; 16 (No Lat.).

*be ðære Israhēla ðeode.* Hom. II, 86; 6. II, 194; 6, etc.

*mid Israhēla cynne,* „among the tribe of the Israelites“. Bl. 7; 8. Wulf. 49; 5.

*Israhēla folc,* „the people of Israel.“ Hom. II, 84; 31, etc. Wulf. 198; 15. 210; 14. Oros. 38. Past. 89; 19 („*domus Israhel*“), etc.

*ðæt Israhēla folc.* Hom. II, 114; 12. 190; 33, etc.

*Israhēla béarn,* „the Children of Israel,“ *filii Israel.* Exod. Gr. 12; 35, 40, 41, 42. 13; 19, etc. Wulf. 210; 20, 22 and frequently. Past. 79; 5, 6.

*his mīldhéortnes is mycel on Israhēlum.* Bl. 7; 6 similar, 11; 18.

*ic ðē gesette eallum Israhēlum tō hēafde,* „*caput in tribubus Israel.*“ Past. 113, 9.

In conclusion are to be noted the two derivatives of „*Israhēl*“ in -isc:

1) *Israhēlisc:* *ðæt Israhēlisc folc,* „*filios Israel.*“ Exod. Gr. 9; 35. 11; 7. 12; 33, 34, etc. Wulf. 174; 17, and several others.

2) *Israhēlitisc.* My sole illustration is from Wulf. 198; 21: *ðæt Israhēlitisc folc,* „*filiorum Israel.*“

This termination -isc, Common German. -isk, signifies „pertaining to,“ „belonging to.“ Cf. Ger. „*deutsch*,“ O. H. G. *diut-isk*, „belonging to the people,“ „popular“ (*diut*, *deot*, „the people“). Particulars in Skeat, „Principles of English Etymology“ I, 271 et seqq., and more extensively, Wilmanns,

Deutsche Grammatik<sup>2</sup> II, § 355 et seq. Cf. also Kluge, Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, S. 472.

§ 3. The Jew, singly, is either „*Jūdeisc man*“, or simply „*Jūdeisc*“, rarely *Jūdeus*; on the other hand the plural shows a great variety of forms; viz.: *Jūpeas*, *iūdeas*, *ȝiūdeas*, *iūdeas* (*iūdēas*), *ḏa jūdeas*, *ḏa jūdeiscan men*, *ḏa jūdeiscan*; *ḏa Jūdean*, *Judan*, *Jūdan*, finally the learned „*Jūdēi*“, of which Ælfrie seems especially fond. The normal form for all periods of O. E. seems, however, to be *Jūdeas*, *ḏa Jūdeas*.

Note 1 on the forms.

Nearly all forms, apart from the purely learned, are native constructions from the Lat. stem *juda-* (*jude-*).

For those with the dental spirant *þ*, *ð*, cf. Pogatscher § 328 et seqq., where the phenomenon is confirmed for many words of Greek and Latin origin. This aspirated pronunciation of Gr.-Lat. *d* is probably due to Greek influence; although the influence of continental O. F. is, perhaps, possible. Cf. Pogatscher's deductions.<sup>1)</sup>

Note 2. On a stem *jūd-*, instead of *jūde-*, corresponding precisely to the German (O. H. G. *judeo*, *judo*; *judeisc*, *judisk*) *Jūdan* and *jūdisc* are formed. In the same manner we find occasionally *ebrisc* for *ebrēisc*.

Note 3. Forms with *ḏ*.

„*ȝiūpea*“ gen. plur. *Hēr feȝtaþ Titus end ȝiūpea[sumæ]* according to Bradley's suggestion (cf. Napier, *The Franks Casket*, Oxford 1900 p. 11); on the inscription we read *ȝupeasu*. (Time beginning of the 8. century).

„*iūdeas*“ is to be deduced from the form contained in Lind. Lk. 10; 33: *ȝode to iūdeos*, „*exiit ad judaeos*“ and from the gen. pl. „*iūdeana*“ Lind. Joh. 19; 42, dat. pl. „*iūdeum*“ Lind. Joh. 19; 40, acc. pl. *iūdeos* Lind. Joh. 18; 38.

### Examples.

#### Singular.

*iūdisc mann furtumatus*. Nap. Ae. Kl. 1; 34.

*ḏu eart iūdeisc and ic eom samaritānisc wif*, „*tu iudaeus*.“ Joh. 4; 9; similar Joh. 18; 35.

*ic iūdisc am*. Joh. Rush. 18; 35. *ḏu iūdisc . . . arḏ*. Joh. Rush. 4; 9.

*ic am iūdeus*. Joh. Lind. 18; 35. *ondsworade him iūdeus, responderunt iudaei* (surprising; sing. for plur.). Rush. Joh. 19; 7.<sup>2)</sup>

<sup>1)</sup> [Cf. Kluge, *Zeitschrift f. rom. Philol.* XX, 325. Morsbach.]

<sup>2)</sup> A weak sing. „*se Jada*“, corresponding to the plur. „*Jūdan*“, „*ḏa Judan*“, I have been unable to locate.

## Plural.

*þæra jūdeiscra manna zeleafleasny.* Wulf. 294, 2.

*ðā cwædon þā Jūdeiscan.* Ælfrie. Herrig's Archiv Vol. 101, p. 314; 4.

*he het ofslean ealle ðā Judiscan men.* Oros. 266, 15.

*ures Hælendes . . . ðe ðā Jūdeiscan ofslōgon.* Ælfrie T. 3; 37.

*ðā cwædon ðā Jūdeas.* Joh. 5; 10. Similar: Ass. XVI, 51, 59, etc. Wulf. 22; 22. 182; 15 (B). 184; 4. Past. 207; 8. 443; 14. Ælfrie's Past. 51 p. 463. Joh. 1; 19. 2; 18, etc. Mt. Lind. p. 15; 14. Nicod. 471, 14, etc.

*Jūdeas hine āhengan on rōde.* Bl. 73, similar Bl. 177; 13, etc. Past. 33; 14. 150; 20. 443; 3. Can. Edg. 39 p. 398. Mk. (W. S. and Rush.) 7; 3. Joh. 4; 9. Rush. Joh. 5; 16, etc. *iūdēas*, Rush. Joh. 19; 31. Lind. Joh. p. 5; 3 (Note).

*þær wæs Jūdea ofslagen XIIIIM, tredecim ibi millia Judaeorum.* Oros. 238; 12, similar Ælfrie T. 8; 37, etc. Oros. 266; 16 (C). Past. 355; 5, etc. Bl. 67; 4, etc. Wulf. 14; 4. Mk. 15; 26, et passim in all versions.

*æt ðām Jūdeum.* Hom. II, 592; also Ass. XVI, 33, 168, 294. Bl. 15; 32, etc. Wulf. 198; 324. Past. 101; 6. 241; 6. Lind. Joh. p. 3; 4. p. 5; 12. 3; 25. 4; 22. Lind. Mt. 28; 15. Rush. Joh. 3; 25. 4; 22; 54, etc. Nicod. 472, 32. 478, 11, 22, etc. Past. 315; 24. 403, 31.

*„iūdēum,”* Lind. Joh. p. 6; 9.

*Jūdei ðā . . . hēoldon heora earan.* Ælfrie Hom. I, 46; 32.

*ðā Jūdei lēddon Crist æt sumum sēle tō anum clife.* Hom. II, 236; 32; also Hom. II, 248; 12. 250; 16, etc. Ass. Ælfr. VI, 74. Mk. Lind. 7; 3. Joh. Rush. 2; 18.

The weak forms are found in the following passages:  
*ealle ðā Jūdan, „Judaeos,”* Oros. 260; 21; similar 262; 23. 266; 1, 16.

*On þēm dagum cōm eac godes wracu ofer Jūþan, „Judaei.”* Oros. 256; 34.

The remaining illustrations all occur in the North. or the Merc.; viz.:

*cynig iūdēana, rex iudaeorum.* Lind. Mk. 15; 9, 12, 18. Lind. Lk. 23; 3, 37, 38. Rush. Lk. 23; 38, and quite frequently, besides, in Lind. and Rush. D. 58; 13. *cynig iūdana.* Rush. Lk. 23; 3.

## The Jewish Sects.

### The Pharisees.

§ 4. The Anglo-Saxons called the Pharisee *Farisēisc*, *Farisēisc mon*, *sē Farisēisca* (Phar-), *Farisēus* (Phar-); in the plur. *Farisēas* (Phar-) and *Farisēi* (Phar-), *Farisēisce*, *ðā Farisēiscan* (Phar-). In late O. E., in addition to the above, the term *sūnder-hālga* (*sūndor-h.*), „*phariseus*,” is much in vogue.

Special dialectical expressions for „Pharisee” are given below, see § 5.

Note 1. The expression „*sūnder-hālga*” must be considered as a learned rendition of „*Phariseus*”: *Phariseus* signifies literally „*divisus*,” „*separatus*,” from Heb. „*Phares*,” „*divisio*,” separation.

Very nearly approaching the O. E. is the O. H. G. expression „*suntirlebin*,” *pharisaei*, with which cf. also O. E. „*sūndor-gēnga*,” „*singularis*,” „one who goes apart.” Bl. 199; 5.

### Illustrations.

*ðā bæd hine sum farisēisc man.* Lk. 11; 37.  
*sum Phariseisc man*, „*homo ex pharisaeis*.” Joh. 3; 1.  
*ic . . . eom Farisēisc*, „*ego Pharisaeus sum*.” Past. 362; 3.  
*intō ðæs farisēiscan hūse*, *domum pharisaei*. Lk. 7; 36;  
 similar, Lk. 11; 38.

*ðā bōceras and Farisēisce*, „the scribes and Pharisees.” Mt. 15; 1.

*ðā Farisēiscean.* Mt. 15; 12. (Phar- Mt. 22; 34, 41.)

We find „*farisēisc*” used as a simple adj. in Bout. 436. Aldh., Giles p. 18): *ðære farisēiscere æfstnunge*, „*pharisaicae temptationis*.”<sup>1)</sup>

*bōcera heora and farisēas*, „*pharisaei*.” Mt. Rush. 7; 29; similar, 12; 14, 24, 38. 15; 1, 12. 16; 1, 19; 3. 22; 15, 41. 23; 2. 13, 15, 23. 27; 62.

*farisēas.* Mt. Rush. 23; 25.

*swā dydon Farisēos.* Past. 59; 20.

*ðā Farisēos gelēfðon*, „*pharisaei*.” Past. 363; 6; very similar, Rush. Mt. 21; 45. 22; 34 (*farisēos*).

<sup>1)</sup> [Cf. Aldhelm Glosses (in Old Engl. Gloss. Napier, An. Ox.) 1259 f. *bære farisēiscere costnunge*, „*farisaicę temptationis*.” Morsbach.]

from *ðā biscopas and fariseos*. Rush. Joh. 18; 3.

*þæra pharisæa*. Joh. 7; 48. 12; 42. Mk. 8; 15.

*iohannes léorningcnihtas . . . and ealswā farisæa*. Lk. 5; 33; similar, Lk. 12; 1. Mt. Rush. 3; 7. 16; 11, 12.

*ðæt folc fariseo, „pharisaeorum.“* Past. 360; 25. *ðæt folc Phariseo*. Past. 361; 25.

*æt ðām pharisēum*. Hom. II, 246; 8.

*mid sumum phariseum*. Hom. II, 412; 25; also Mk. 12; 13.

*tō ðām phariseon*. Joh. 7; 45. 9; 13. 11; 46. 18; 3.

Note 2. *fariseo* in Past. probably stands for *fariseorum*, the abbreviation for „*rum*“ having been omitted by the scribe.

Also in „*fariseos*“ we have, quite probably, a learned inflexion; for 1) we find, to my knowledge, the ending *-os* in no genuine O. E. words, and 2) analogous cases occur in which *-os* performs the functions of an acc., and *-i* of a nom. or even a dat. plur., but only in learned words of Latin origin. Vid. under „*discipul*.“

Note 3. An unusual form is the nom. plur. „*farissæis*“ : *farissæis ðā cwēdun, Pharisei dixerunt*. Mt. Rush. 12; 2.

Note 4. A single passage contains the weak sing. „*farissæa*“ : *ðā farissæa!* Mt. Rush. 23; 26.

The learned forms are for the most part peculiar to Late O. E.: *Ðā stōd sē farisēus*. Lk. 18; 11.

*ðu blínda Phariseus!* Mt. 23; 26; very similar, Past. 312; 5.

Note 5. „*farisæus*“ is found once as an uninflected genitive: *on dæc farisæus hūse*. Lk. 7; 37.

*ðā ongunnon pharisēi . . .* Hom. II, 298; 27.

*þā wæron . . . Pharisei fæstende*. Mk. 2; 18; elsewhere, 2; 24. 3; 6, etc. Mt. 21; 45. 23; 2, 13, 15, 23, 25, 27, 29.

*Farisæi*. Mt. 19; 3.

*ðā Pharisei*. Mk. 8; 11. Joh. 4; 1. 7; 32 (2×), 47. 8; 3, 13, etc. Mt. 22; 15.

*ðā farisēi*. Lk. 5; 17. Mk. 2; 16, etc.

*farisēi*. Rush. Mt. 9; 11, 14. Mt. 16; 1. Ass. (Æ) V, 2.

*iohannes léorning-cnihtas and phariseorum, „discipuli iohannis et pharisaeorum.“* Mk. 2; 18.

*fram beorman Fariseorum*. Mt. 16; 6.

*súnder-hálga (súndor-)*:

*ān súnder-hálga*. Hom. II, 420, 34.

*ðā súnder-hálgan*. Hom. II, 420, 2.



*bōceras and sūndorhālgan*, „scribae eorum et pharisaei. Mt. 7; 29.

Further *sūnder-hālgā*: Hom. II, 422; 3, 10. 470; 6. 472; 1. Hom. I, 338; 11. II, 216; 26. 428; 3, 15. 430; 11, 34. Ass. (Æ) V, 2 (Ms. S<sup>1</sup>).

Defens. 75; 2. 203; 2. 206; 3.

*sūndor-hālgā*: Lk. 6; 2. 7; 30, 36, 39. 18; 10. Joh. 1; 24. Mt. 3; 7. 5; 20. 7; 29. 9; 11, 14, 34. 12; 14, 24, 38. 27; 62.

### Terms peculiar to the Northumbrian and Mercian.

§ 5. The North.-Merc. presents a number of native expressions for Pharisee, which are wanting in the remaining O. E. dialects. We are here concerned with the following:

1. *æ-lāruw (lāruw)*, „Teacher of the Law,“ „*pharisaeus*,“ from *æ*, *æw*, (O. H. G. *ēwa*), „Law“ i. e. here the Law of the Hebrews, and *lāruw*, „teacher“ (*lār f.*, doctrine, instruction, + *ðeow*, servant; cf. *lātteow*, leader, < *lād* + *ðeow*, and vid. Sievers, Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 43, Anm. 4):

*ðā æ-lārwas*, „*pharisaei*.“ Lind. Mk. 8; 11, 15. 9; 11. 10; 2. 12; 13. Lk. p. 5; 5, 14. 7; 3, etc. in Mk. Lk. Joh.

Rush.: *ðāra æ-lārwa*, „*pharisaeorum*.“ Mk. 8; 15. 9; 11. 12; 13. Joh. 9; 15. 11; 46, 47. 12; 19.

Note. Very nearly approaching this word, but probably used only in a literal sense, is the expression „*æ-lærend*“, found but once (El. 506): *hē wæs sanctus Paulus . . . him nænig wæs ælærendra oðer betera*, „no better teacher of the Law.“

In Rush. the compound occurs resolved into its component parts, and with inflected *æ*:

*ðā æs lārwas*, „*pharisaei*.“ Joh. 7; 32 (2×), 45, 47, 48. 8; 3. 9; 13, 16, 40. 12; 42.

2. Simply „*lārwas*,“ plur. „teachers“ (sc. of the Law):

*ðā lārwas*, „*pharisaei*.“ Rush. Mk. 8; 11. 10; 2.

3. *ðā ældo*, *ældo*, *ældu*, *āldo*, *āldu*, *ældra*, *āldra*, lit. „Elders.“

In Lind. Rush. no distinction at all is made between the „*seniores Populi*“ and the „*pharisaei*“: both are conceived as *seniores*, „*āldo*“; while the W. S. designates only the Elders with the corresponding „*éaldras*“. The same is true of „*ðā āldra*“ and „*ðā āldormen*“ cited below.

## a) As Pharisees:

*uðwuto and ðā áldo*, „*scribae et pharisaei*.“ Lind. Mk. 2; 16  
*ðā áldo*, „*pharisaei*.“ Lind. Lk. 7; 30. Further Lind.:  
 Lk. 11; 42, 43 (*áldo*), 53. 13; 31. 16; 14. Joh. p. 5; 7. p. 6;  
 1, 13. Mt. 16; 1, 6 (*áldra*), 11, 12 (*áldra*).

Rush.: *ðā áldu*, „*pharisaei*.“ Mk. 2; 16, 18 (2×). 7; 1.

*ðā áldu*. Lk. 11; 53.

*áldu and alle iudēas*, „*pharisaei et omnes judaei*.“ Mk. 7; 3.  
*wæ iow áldum!* „*vae vobis, pharisaei*.“ Lk. 11; 42, further  
 11; 43. 12; 1.

## b) As „Elders of the People“:

„*a senioribus et a summis sacerdotibus*“, from *áldum* and  
 from *hēh-sācerdum*. Lind. Mk. 8; 31 and frequently. Rush.  
 Mk. 8; 31. 11; 27 and frequently.

4. *áldra*, senior, *pharisaeus*.

For the sense of „Pharisee“, I have but one illustration:  
*ān wæs áldra*, „*unus pharisaeus*“. Rush. Lk. 18; 10.

The sense „senior“ is the more customary:

„*a senioribus*“, from *áldrum*. Lind. Rush. (*áldrum*). Mt.  
 16; 21, etc.

5. The same conception is expressed in a single instance  
 by „*áld*“, old, + the above-mentioned „*æ-lāruw*“:

*ðā áldo æ-lārwas*, „*pharisaei*.“ Lind. Joh. 8; 13.

6. Very similar to this construction is the frequent combination  
*áldo wutu* (*álda wuta*), senior, *pharisaeus*; i. e. „*áld*“  
 and „*wutu*“, W. S. „*wita*“, the wise (witty) man, from the verb  
 „*witan*“, Ger. „*wissen*“, Mod. Eng. „*to wit*“.

In rendering, therefore, the Jewish „*seniores populi*“ with  
 his native „*witan*“, the translator selected precisely the most  
 suitable word; for the assembly of the Elders in the Jewish  
 state finds its parallel in the „*witena gemōt*“ or grand council  
 of state of the Anglo-Saxons.

As „*pharisaeus*“:

*sē álda wuta*, „*pharisaeus*.“ Lind. Lk. 7; 31.

*ðā æ-lārwas vel áldo wutu*, „*pharisaei*.“ Lind. Lk. 5; 17,  
 further Lind. Lk. 7; 36. 11; 37, 39. Mt. 22; 15 (*áldo-wutu*).

*gē áelde-wutu*, „*vos pharisaei*.“ Rush. Lk. 11; 39.

As „senior“:

*ǣldo wuto*, „seniores (judaeorum).“ Lind. Lk. 7; 3.

In Lind. Mt. 21; 23 we find *wuto* alone for „seniores“:

„seniores (sc. populi),“ *ǣldo vel wuto*.

7. *ḡa ǣldo menn* (wearas),“ from „mann“ and „wer,“ man:

*ḡa ǣldo menn*, „pharisaei.“ Lind. Mt. 21; 45. 22; 34.

*ḡa ǣlde wearas*, „pharisaei.“ Rush. Joh. 4; 1.

Thus the Pharisee is here conceived as „senior populi“;  
cf. sub 3.

8. Rush. has once or twice for Pharisee the word „*uḡwuta*,“ „*ǣlde uḡwuta*,“ a term occurring often in Lind. Rush, but, excepting in the above, in the sense of Lat. „scriba,“ scribe (q. v.):

*ḡara uḡwutuna*, „pharisaeorum.“ Rush. Lk. 14; 1. *sum ǣlde uḡwuta*, „quidam pharisaeus“. 11; 37.

9. *æ-cræftig*, acquainted with, versed („crafty“) in, the Law, *pharisaeus*:

*Pharisaei, æcræftigo*. Lind. Mt. 12; 24, 38.

10. *ǣldormenn* (W. S. *éaldormen*, in the sense of „seniores populi“: Mk. 8; 31, etc.).

The *ǣldorman* in the A.-S. State was a nobleman of high rank, who was intrusted by the royal authority with the government of a province or a county.

„*ǣldor*,“ the first component part of the word, denoted originally an Elder (of the tribe), in historical O. E. prince, ruler; cf. the Oxford Dict. art. „*alderman*,“ Bos. Toll. „*éaldor-mann*.“

Under the influence of Christianity, this word, which had heretofore been used only in a worldly sense, received in so far a religious coloring as it was employed by the translators of the Bible to denote a) the Jewish High Priests, the „*principes sacerdotum*,“ „*pontifices*,“ and b) the Pharisees — the latter sense, however, only in North.-Merc.

### Examples.

a) *ḡa éaldormen ḡara sācerda þōhtan ḡæt hīe wōldan Lazarum ofslēan*. Bl. 77; 7.

*sē éaldorman ðāra Jūdeā and ðāra sācerda.* 153; 23; very similar 153, 1. 177; 19 („*principes sacerdotum*“).

*Caiphan þone éaldorman þāra sācerda* (Lat. simply „*Cai-phanque*“). Bede 442, 29.

*fram yldrum and bōcerum and éaldormannum ðāra sācerda,* „*a principibus sacerdotum.*“ Mt. 16; 21, further Lk. 22; 4, 52, etc.

„*principes sacerdotum,*“ *áldormenn ðāra sācerda.* Lind. Rush. Joh. 12; 10, etc.

„*ad pontifices et pharisaeos,*“ *tō ðēm áldor-monnum and ðā ælārwas.* Lind. Joh. 7; 45, very similar Rush., etc. in Lind. Rush.

b) „*Pharisaei, áldormenn.*“ Lind. Mt. 15; 1, 12.

Further, „*pharisaei, áldormen.*“ Rush. Mk. 7; 5, similar Rush.: Lk. 13; 31. 14; 3. 15; 2. 17; 20. Joh. 8; 3.

§ 6. The Scribes, Lat. *scribae*, are called in O. E. usually „*bōceras*,“ properly writers, authors,<sup>1)</sup> from *bōc*, book; more rarely „*writeras*,“ writers, from *writan*, to write.

#### Examples.

*ðā bōceras and Farisēisce,* „*scribae et pharisaei.*“ Mt. 15; 1, etc. in the W. S. Gospels. Bl. 85; 1. Defens. 203; 2. Hom. I, 338; 10, 12. I, 44; 29, 78; 11. II, 300; 3, 470; 6. Lives 25; 32.

„*scribas populi,*“ *bōkeras ðæs folkes.* Rush. Mt. 2; 4, etc.

„*cum scribis,*“ *mið bōcerum.* Lind. Mt. 27; 41.

„*scribae, ðā bōcere.*“ Lind. Mk. p. 5; 3.

The North.-Merc. is here, likewise, distinguished by its peculiar terminology: in addition to „*bōcere*,“ the term already noted, viz. „*uðwuta*,“ is of very frequent occurrence.

The word properly signifies „very wise man,“ „philosopher,“ from *wuta* (*weota; wita*), „wise man,“ and the intensive particle *uð*.

#### Examples.

„*quidam de scribis,*“ *of uðwutum.*“ Lind. Rush. Mk. 2; 6, etc El. 473 (*uðweotan*).

<sup>1)</sup> Thus, e. g. Ass. (Æ) II, 210: *Beda, sē mæra bōcere*, „Bede, the famous author“ etc.

### The Sadducees.

§ 7. As with „*Pharisaeus*,“ so also here we have to deal with both a foreign term and an O. E. adaptation of „*Sadducaeus*.“

The borrowed forms are, „*sadducēas*,“ „*ḡā Sadducie*,“ „*ḡā Sadduceisean*,“ the native circumlocution is „*riht-wisend*,“ teacher of the law, one acquainted with the law (cf. O. H. G. „*rehtwisendlic*“ = Mod. Ger. „*rechtsverständlich*“).

Learned forms like „*Sadducei*,“ or even the gen. plur. „*Sadducaeorum*,“ are likewise not uncommon.

### Illustrations.

*eodun tō him Fariseās and Sadducēas.* Rush. Mt. 16; 1.

*Saducēas.* Ibid. 22; 23, 34.

*ḡā Saducie.* Past. 362; 5.

*ḡæt folc Phariseo and Saducia.* Past. 361, 25.

„*saducea*,“ *Sadducaeorum.* Rush. Mt. 3; 7.

*sadducēa.* Rush. Mt. 16; 6, 12.

*saducēæ.* 16; 11.

*ḡā Saduceiscan.* Mt. 22; 34.

*sume of Saducēum, „quidam Saducaeorum.“* Lk. 20; 27.

*Farisei and Saducei.* Mt. 16; 1.

*ḡā cōmon him tō Saducei, „Sadducaei.“* Mk. 12; 18, further Mt. 22; 23.

*zȳmaḡ and wárniḡ fram beorman Fariseorum and Saducaeorum.* Mt. 16; 6, 11, 12.

*riht-wisend:*

*he zeseh manega ḡæra súnderhālgena, and ḡæra riht-wisendra, „multos Pharisaeorum et Sadducaeorum.“* Mt. 3; 7 (only illustration!).

### The Samaritans.

§ 8. The Samaritans were not regarded as Jews but almost as heathen. This explains the fact that we find, in addition to the typical designation „*samaritanisc*,“ also the paraphrases „*hæðen*,“ „*hæðen-monn*,“ pagan, heathen, and „*hoda*,“ „*gentes*,“ „*samaritani*.“

These latter expressions, however, obtain only in the North.-Merc,

Rush. possesses, in addition, the expression „*Samaringas*“, *Samaritain*:

In . . . *cæstra Samaringa, in civitatem samaritanorum* Mt. 10; 5. „*Samaringas*“ is derived from *Samaria* (the capital of the country) by means of the O. E. ending *-ing* (German. *-inga*); cf. such proper names as O. E. *Geransingas, Gomorringas, Cedaringas, Moabitingas, Idumingas, Seringas* etc. (Kluge, in Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, 470, and in his *Nominale Stammbildungslehre*<sup>2</sup> § 26), derived from the names of biblical cities and countries.

### Illustrations.

*Sum samaritānisc man.* Lk. 10; 33.

*ðes wæs Samaritānisc.* Lk. 17; 16, similar Joh. 8; 48.

*Jūdeas and Samaritāniscen men.* Joh. 4; 9, similar 4; 39.

*ðurh ðā tielunga ðes Samaritāniscan.* Past. 125; 7.

*cwædon . . . ðæt hē wære Samaritānisc.* Hom. II, 228; 29, very similar 230; 2, 3.

*wif ðio samaritānesca.* Rush. Joh. 4; 9. *wif ðio samaritāniscā.* Lind. Joh. 4; 9.

*Samaritānesc arð ðā.* Rush. Joh. 8; 48.

*ðā samaritāniscan.* Joh. 4; 40.

*ða samaritānisco.* Joh. Lind. 4; 40.

*ðāra samaritānesca, „Samaritanorum.“* Rush. Joh. 4; 39, 40. Lind. Mt. 10; 5.

*ðāra samaritāniscena.* Lind. Joh. 4; 39.

*tō samaritāniscum, „samaritanis.“* Lind. Joh. 4; 9.

Learned Form:

*on ðā ceastre samaritanorum, „in civitatem samaritanorum.“* Lk. 9; 52.

Note 1. The expressions, „*from samaritānum, a samaritāno*“, Lind. Lk. p. 6; 20, and „*Samaritāna*“ (gen. plur.) Joh. 4; 9, indicate the existence of the form \**Samaritān(us)*, plur. \**Samaritānas*, -i. Cf. *Phariseus*, plur. *Phariseas*, -i.

*Samaritanus, þæt is hæðinmonn.* Lind. Lk. 10; 33.

*hic erat Samaritanus, „þes wæs hæðin“ (hæðen, Rush.).* Lind. Lk. 17; 16.

*samaritanorum, ðāra samaritāniscana lōda.* Lind. Joh. p. 4; 5.

*in civitatem „samaritanorum, . . . ðāra lōda.“* Lind. Rush. Lk. 9; 52.

*ðæra samaritānesca vel ðāra hoda „samaritanorum.“* Lind. Mt. 10; 5, similar, Lk. 17; 11.

Note 2. Cf.: „*In terra Genassenorūm, in eorūo ðāra hoda.*“ Lind. Mt. p. 15; 18. Lk. 8; 26, 37.

### Heathen.

§ 9. The Lat. contains four different expressions denoting, heathen, viz. „*gentes*“, „*gentiles*“, „*ethnici*“, and „*pagani*“.

„*Gentes*“ translates Grk. τὰ ἔθνη.

„*Paganus*“ comes into notice first in the Ecel. Lat. of the 4th century; prior to this time the word denoted „relating to the „*pagus*“, „*rusticus*“, „*rustic*.“

As Christianity won its way at first only into the cities, and but slowly extended its sway into the rural districts, an identification of the rustic („*paganus*“) with the heathen („*gentilis*“) was much facilitated.

In the rendition into O. E. of the Lat. terms just cited, there is considerable variation: no less than five translations are found, viz.:

1. *hæðen*, a pagan, in the plur. pagans, or heathen collectively; thus, in the sing. it is equivalent to Lat. *paganus*, in the plur. to *gentes*, *gentiles*, *ethnici*.

2. *þeod*, plur. *þeoda*, „*gens*“, „*gentes*“.

3. *cynn*, „*gens*“.

4. *æ-swica*, properly „traitor“, „deceiver“, — „one who turns from another“.

5. *hoda*, properly „people“, then „*gentes*“ (rare).

The three last mentioned words are attested only for the North.-Merc.

§ 10. 1. *hæðen*, adj. O. H. G. *heidan*, O. S. *heðin*, O. N. *heidenn*, Goth. *haiþnô* fem. (found only once), Common German term for Lat. *paganus*.

Considerations „which I have given below („Note“), have led me to accept the view set forth by Kluge, Seiler, and others, concerning the origin of this term, viz. that, in the case of *hæðen*, *haiþnô*, etc., we have to do with nothing more nor less than an artificially constructed rendering, devised by the Goth.-Arian Church, of the

Lat. *paganus*. The Goths, then, acting as a medium, transmitted the word (adapting itself, of course, to the phonology of the various dialects) to the other Teutonic tribes.

According to this view, therefore, the word never existed, as an original derivative in the sense of „pertaining to a heath (*hæð*)“ „*agrestis*.“ (Thus Skeat, *Ety. Dict.* 3rd Ed. 1898).

In like manner also Ger. „*taufen*“, O. S. *dōpian*, Goth. *daupjan*, are held to have been constructed through Gothic influence on the model of Lat. „*baptizare*“. Cf. also O. E. *dyppan*, to „dip“, to immerse, *baptizare*, vid. Seiler, S. 89 et seqq., Kluge in his „*Wörterbuch*“ and in Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, 359.

Note 1. Nowhere in O. E. literature have I been able to find any trace of an original meaning „*agrestis*“. The same is probably true likewise of the other Germanic languages. It is true that Jacob Grimm (*Myth.* 4. Aufl. Bd. 3, S. 1 ff.) asserts the discovery of a case where O. H. G. *heidan* = „*agrestis*“; but his „*demo heidanin commane*“ „*rustico*“ is surely too isolated to act as proof positive of his assertion, in the face of the total absence of a similar sense elsewhere in the German and in the remaining Germanic languages. At all events, the above explanation, while of course not absolutely incontrovertible, is certainly very probable.

Note 2. Of late years there has been another attempt to account for *hæðen*, etc.

Prof. S. Bugge (*Indog. Forsch.* V, 178) advances the theory that the prototype of Goth. *haiþnō*, \**haiþans*, was the Armenian *het anos*, „Pagan“, „heathen“. This view the *Oxf. Dict.* seems inclined to accept. But there are two considerations that make Bugge's surmise improbable; first, that the stem-vowel (*æ*, *ai* is not accounted for. The *Oxf. Dict.* thinks, this can, however, be explained „by assimilation to *haiþi*, heath“. But what possible room for assimilation can exist between terms so entirely different in meaning as *het anos*“, „infidel“, „gentile“, and *haiþi*, „heath?“ In the second place, it would seem just as probable to account for the Germ. *-an* (O. H. G. *heidan*) by assuming *Ulfilas* was influenced by the Latin *pag-anus* and similar adjectives, as to accept the *het anos*-theory. Cf. the Germ. — *āri* — < Lat. — *ārius*, for example.

Fundamentally considered, *hæðen* in O. E. denotes every unbaptized person. Thut we read in Ælfrie's canons:

*And gif ungefullod cild færlīce bið gebrōht tō þām mæsse preoste, ðæt he hit mōt fullian sōna mid ofste, ðæt hit ne swelte hæðen.* Thorpe p. 445 XXVI.



As „*hæðen*“ is of such frequent occurrence, I need scarcely cite more than a few typical cases.

„*hæðen*“ as an adjective:

*monega hæðena þeoda*, „*ex gentium populis*“. Ælf. „Gesetze“, Einleitung 49, 1.

*hæðen hildfruma*. Jul. 7.

As a substantive:

*Albanus hæðen ðā ȝȳt*, „*Albanus paganus adhuc*“. Bede 34, 12.

*ðām sēocan hæðenan*. Hom. II, 24. 33.

*Hie ferdon ongean ðæm hæðnum*. Bl. 203; 3.

As an adjective used as a noun: *hū, ne dōð hæðene swā?* „*nonne ethnici hoc faciunt?*“ Mt. 5; 47.

### The Non-Jews.

§ 11. For the non-Jews we find „*hæðen*“, Dan. 330. Gen. 2483 etc., where the poet forgets his own personality completely, judging and observing everything from a Jewish point of view; and also in the New Testament (Joh. 12; 12) „*hæðen*“ translates lat. „*gentiles*“, even when the latter designates the Greek gentiles who were of the Jewish faith. Cf. also Nicod. 476, 5 and 19.

As a term of ridicule and contempt „*hæðen*“ is found, finally, more than once in poetry.

Thus of the monster Grendel it is said (Bēow. 850 et seqq.): „*[hē] drēama lēas in fen-freoðo feorh ālegde, hæðene sǣwle*.“

Jul. 536 the devil is called „*hæðen*“, a pagan.

When, on the other hand, the author desires to defend the Jews, or to emphasize the contrast between Christians and Jews, he makes no hesitation in branding even them as heathen.

Thus Lives III, 566:

„*ān æðele læce Joseph gehāten, hæðen and Jūdēisc*“, *Joseph quidam Hebraeus erat egregius*“.

Sat. 540 Peter says of the Jews who have crucified the Lord, that they are „*hæðene*“, „heathen“.

§ 12. 2. *þeod* str. fem. „*gens*“, plur *þeoda*, „*gentes*“. Cf. O. H. G. *diot*, plur. *diota*, „*gentes*“, O. N. *þjóð*, „*gens*“, „*populus*“.

O. E. *þeod* denoted first of all „gens“, nation generally, then later, under the influence of the Lat. „gentes“, we find in addition to the older meaning the plur. „þeoda“ for heathen nations.

Precisely the same development of meaning was experienced by both O. H. G. and Goth. (cf. Raumer, p. 285), while O. N. „þjóð“ retains the original meaning (Kahle, p. 17, Act. Germ.<sup>1</sup>) For philological information, see Kluge, „Wörterbuch“, art. „deutsch“.

In the following citations the plur. forms only are considered, as the sing. signifies either „nation“ or „people“, but never „heathen“.

a) As „nations“:

*ðā sint nū of hǣðenum ðeodum tō Crīste gecirde.* Ælfr.'s „Gesetze“, Einl. 49, 2.

*monega hǣðena ðeoda.* 49, 1.

*monega ðeoda*, „plures nationes“. 49, 7.

*on ðæm lónde is XXX ðeoda*, „gentes triginta“. Oros. 10; 28. very similar, 10; 32. 12; 2 etc.

[*hē*] *bodade godspell . . . hǣðenum ðeodum*, „gentibus“. Hom. II, 294; 13.

*ðā sette hē ðeoda gemæru*“, the boundaries of nations“. Hom. I, 518; 14. similar I, 462, 15. II, 258; 22. Wulf. 157, 12, 16.

b) As „gentiles“, the gentiles (heathen):

*Paulus . . . ðone hē (= sē hālga Gāst) gecēas tō lārēowe eallum ðeodum.* Hom. I, 324; 2.

(*Paulus*) *is gecweden ealra ðeoda lārēow.* Hom. I, 384. 21. II, 332; 6 etc.

*Haec omnia gentes inquirunt, ealle ðās ðing ðeoda sēceað.* Mt. 6; 32 (W. S. and Rush.).

Further: Mt. W. S. and Rush. 12; 18, 21. 28; 19.

§ 13. 3. *cyn(n)* str. neut., plur. (in North.) *cynna*. Properly „tribus“, „genus“; cf. Goth. *kuni*, O. H. G. *kunni*, „race“, „family“.

<sup>1</sup>) Nevertheless two passages do occur in Fritzner („Ordbog“ sub *þjóð*), where O. N. *þjóð* in the plur. signifies heathen nations; but as these are mostly taken from translations of O. E. religious literature, they need scarcely be seriously regarded.

In the sense of Grk. τὰ ἔθνη, heathen nations, the word is of frequent occurrence, but only in the North.-Mere.:

*Haec enim omnia gentes inquirunt* — „*gentes, cynna vel hædno*“. Lind. Mt. 6; 32.

„*gentibus, hædnum vel cynnum*.“ Lind.: Mt. 12; 18, 21, 28; 19. Similar: Lk. 2; 32, 21; 24. Mk. 13; 10. Lk. 24; 47. Rush.: Lk. 2; 32, 21; 24 (2×). Mk. 13; 10.

§ 14. 4. *eswica*, „*hypocrita*“, „*ethnicus*“, from the verb W.S. *ā-swican*, to become apostate, dissemble, deceive.

The prefix *ē-* (W.S. *æ-*, *ā-*) signifies „from“, „out of“, represented in Goth. by *us-*, in O.H.G. by *ur-*, *ir-*. The verb „*swican*“ means „to fall away“, „to deceive“, from „*swic*“, deception.

I have found the expression in the sense of „heathen“ in vogue only in the North.:

„*nonne ethnici hoc faciunt? ah ne eswice ðis dōas?*“ Lind. Mt. 5; 47.

„*sicut ethnici, swæ eswico*.“ 6; 7.

*eswica, ethnicus*“. 18; 17.

§ 15. 5. *ðā lioda*, „people“ in a general sense, then quite rarely equivalent to „*gentiles*“, „*gentes*“, „the heathen“, „the gentiles“, but only in North.-Mere.

The only illustrations of this use of „*lioda*“ known to me have already been noted; vid. „Samaritans“, § 8.

§ 16. The state of being a heathen, paganism, the unbaptized state, is called principally „*hæðendōm*“, str.m., Lat. „*gentilitas*“, „*paganismus*“, from „*dōm*“, „judgment“, „law“, or, as second component part in compounds, „state of being“, „office“. Cf. O.H.G. *heidantuom*, O.N. *heiðenn dōmr* and *heiðenn dōmr*, with the same meaning.

Note 1. In rare instances, the expression is found resolved into its component parts, each of which is inflected:

*æne crīstendōme ealle hēaldan and ælcne hæðene-dōm mid ealle oferhogian*. Wulf. 274, 15.

*ne on hæðenedōme hūru ne zebringe*, „vel in gentilitatem“. Cnut II, 3 S. A., but Lieberman has *hæðenedōme* in one word; cf. also *crīstendōm* below.

## Examples.

*ǣlcne hǣpendōm géorne āworpen*, „*omni paganismo sedulo renuntiare*“. Edw. Guth. Ges. Pref. 1, and passim in the „*Laws*“. *be hǣðendōme*, „concerning heathenism“. Wulf. 309, 10. *hwyrfen in hǣðendōm*. Dan. 221.

&c.

The sense of Mod. Eng. „heathendom“, the heathen collectively, the pagan world, is quite rare in O. E. This meaning is probably due to the influence of the Lat.

„*gentilitas*“ (cf. „*hǣðeness*“ below).

Thus Cnut II, 3:

*wē beodað þæt man Crīstene men ealles tō swiðe of éarde ne sylle ne on hǣðendōme hūru ne gebringe*, „*praecipimus ne Christiani passim in exilium vendantur vel in gentilitatem*“.

Also the following: *gif hwā crīstene* (= -enne) *man on hǣðendōm sylle* „*si quis hominem christianum in regionem gentilem vendiderit*.“ Can. Edg. Mod. imp. Poen. p. 410, 43.

Note 2. The Oxf. Dict. apparently considers this use of heathendom peculiar to Mod. Eng., as it gives for the earliest example of this sense a citation from 19<sup>th</sup> century literature! But, as we see, O. E. *hǣðendōm* was likewise employed in precisely the same way. This note applies also to *hǣðenscipe* § 17, Note 2.

§ 17. Besides „*hǣðendōm*“, the compound „*hǣðenscipe*“ str. m. was also employed to denote pagan belief, „*gentilitas*“.

In composition the suffix -*scipe* is widely used, and signifies „state of being“, „office“, „dignity“:

*wē forbodað éornostlice ǣlcne hǣðenscipe; hǣðenscipe bið ðæt man ídola wéorðige*. Cnut II, 5.

*on hǣðenscipe wunigende*, „*paganis ritibus oberrantes*“. Hom. I, 504; 12. Similar: I, 130, 206; 33. II, 498, 24, 504; 6, 11. &c. &c. Wulf. 102; 2, 5. 104; 24. 399; 14. Ass. (Æ) IX, 271, 428. Oros. 40; 24. Poen. Eegb. IV, 20 p. 380. Etc. in the „*Laws*“.

Note 1. *Hǣðenscipe* as „idolatry“ is very rare, and cannot always be distinguished from *hǣðenscipe*, „paganism“:

*and gif gē . . . ne hǣðenscipes gýmað on ænige wisan*, „*si post deos alienos non ambuleritis*.“ Wulf. 50, 3.

*Julianus . . . mid eallum mōde hǣðenscipe beþode*. Hom. I, 448; 29. *wē næfre ne bûgað tō ðinum hǣðenscipe*. Hom. II, 18; 35. Similar, Ass. (Æ) III, 97. V, 131.

Note 2. Whether *hæðenscipe* in Late O. E. can denote „heathendom“, „the heathen world“ is not proved by the following examples:

(*Juno*) *wearð swyðe hēalīc gyden æfter hæðenscipe zetēald* „Juno was accounted by the heathen(?) a very noble goddess.“ Wulf. 106, 13. Very similar, 107, 21.

*sē sunu wæs . . . swyðor on hæðenscipe gewurðod ðonne sē fæder wære.* Ibid. 106, 19.

§ 18. Like *hæðenscipe*, is used the rare term „*hæðenes*“ str. fem., found only in early texts; from *hæðen* and *-nes*, common German. abstract suffix (properly divided as *-n — es*: Kluge, Nom. Stammbildungslehre<sup>2</sup> § 137 f. „Principles“ I, p. 253; Wilmanns, Deutsche Gram.<sup>2</sup> II § 269 et seqq.):

*monige . . . hæðenisse ðēaw forlēton.* Bede 62, 15.

*ðā Sighere forlet ðā zerynu ðæs crīstnan zeleāfan & tō hæðenisse wæs gehwyrfed.* Bede 250, 6.

*wit nōldon þæt ðās hālgan bēc lēncg in dære hæðenisse wuneden* „... among the heathen“. Cart. Sax. No. 634 (between 871—889).

From *hæðen* the substantive was derived by means of the suffix *-isc* the adj. *hæðenisc*, pagan, heathenish.

This expression occurs but rarely, and in Ælfred:

*heora godas bædon ðæt him man worhte anfteātra ðæt mon mehte ðone hæðeniscan plegan ðærinne dōn.* Oros. 102, 12. Similar, 202, 6. 296, 21.

### Christians.

§ 19. Lat. „*christianus*“ gives the O. E. borrowings *crīsten* adj. and the substantives *crīsten* str. m. and *crīstena* w. m., from O. E. „*Chrīst*“, Christ.

The O. H. G. has *cristan*, *cristāni* adj., and *cristāno* subst. O. N. *kristenn* springs from either O. E. *crīsten* or M. L. G. *kristen*. Cf. Kahle p. 18. The Gothic presents only the proper noun *Xristus*, „Christ“; the scanty literature of that language does not furnish us with a designation for Christian.

Note. The quantity of the vowel in „*crīsten*“.

O. E. „*crist*“ (on the Lat.-Romance origin of which vid. Kluge in Paul's „Grundriss“ 2. Aufl. I, S. 359 Anm., with which compare „Grundriss“ 1. Aufl. I, 783, 784) renders probable the supposition that the derivatives „*crīsten*“, „*cristendōm*“ etc. should be written with long *i*; nevertheless it

should be noted that I have never found in the MSS. any such marks of length.<sup>1)</sup>

On „*crist*“ in M. E., and on M. E. analogy lengthenings, such as *cristendōm*, the reader is referred to Morsbach, *Mittelenglische Gram.* § 62 and „Anm.“

Some of the most important illustrations here follow; however, as the term in question is of such frequent occurrence, only a few passages will be given.

As an adjective:

*him séalde Justinus āne crīstene bōc.* Oros. 6; 12.

*crīstenes folces.* Ps. 106, 31.

As a substantive:

*betuh ðām ðe ðær crīstene wæron.* Oros. 260; 17.

*gif ænig crīsten āgylte.* Oros. 266; 10. *sē deoflica cāsere þe æfter Nerone ðā reðan ehtnyssa besette on ðām crīstenum.* Ælfrie T. 16; 14.

*ne byð sē man nā Crīsten.* Ælfrie T. 22; 22.

*crīstenra* (gen. plur.) An. 1677. El. 980.

*sē crīstena.* Ælfrie Lives XVII, 124.

*ðā crīstenan.* Ibid. XVII, 1.

Even more in vogue than the foregoing, was the combination of *crīsten* with „*monn*“, *man* (cf. *hæðenmon* etc.):

*wē bebeodað ælcum crīstenum men,* „every Christian“.

Edm. „Gesetze“ I, 2.

*hē wæs monna ærest ehtend crīstenra monna.* Oros. 262; 4.

*ðā crīstnan men.* Oros. 268; 13.

*crīstene men,* „*christianos*“. Bede 34, 1.

*dæl crīstenum mannum,* „share among the Christians.“

Hom. I, 418; 14.

*Sē ercediacon . . . geaxode mā crīstenra manna* I, 418; 25.

*crīstne men,* „Christians“. Jul. 5.

### The Christians as the Faithful.

§ 20. From „*zeleafa*“, „belief“, „faith“, are derived the designations of the Christians as „*zeleafsum*“ and „*zeleafful*“: *in ðām lācum zeleafsumra.* Bede 64, 7.

<sup>1)</sup> [If this is really the case, we may assume shortness of vowel in O. E. *Crist*, *cristen* &c. and explain the M. E. and N. E. lengthenings through French influence. Morsbach.]

*ða crīstenan men and ða geleafsuman* Bede 42, 4. *ða geleafsuman*. Bl. 117; 9.

In this connection, however, the word „*geleafful*“ is much more frequently employed than *geleafsum*; and for the later periods of O. E. „*ða geleaffullan*“ alone is found:

*ða beorhtan steorran getācniað ða geleaffullan*. Cock. III, 238, 4. *Screadunga* 24, 20.

*Protector fidelium Deus, scīldend gīleaffulra god*. D. Rit. 98, 3. Similar, 121, 20.

*geleaffulle, fideles*. De C. M. 400, 4. Bl. 81; 16.

*ða geleaffullan*. Hom. I, 516; 35. 326; 28. II, 290; 33, &c. Bl. 5, 30. *Past*. 139, 16, &c.

A favorite phrase is also „*geleaffulle men*“, „*fideles*“. Thus *Past*. 319, 2. 367, 16. *Poen*. Ecgb. I, 15 (2×) &c. Bl. 33, 4. 35, 3.

§ 21. A superlative of „*crīsten*“ is found Bede 142, 15:

*sē mon wæs þurh eall sē crīstenesta and sē gelæredesta*, „*vir per omnia christianissimus atque doctissimus*.“ Similar, Bede 110, 3. 176, 22.

§ 22. From the noun „*crīsten*“ was formed the verb „*crīstnian*“, „*catechizare*“, „to prepare a candidate for baptism“: *siðþan hē gecrīstnad wæs*, „*cum catechizaretur*“. Bede 138, 22.

*ðeah hē ða ȝyt nāre fullice . . . gefulwad, ah hē wæs gecrīstnod*. Bl. 213; 13.

*nū þū eart gecrīstnod ær ðinum fulwihte*, „*. . . adhuc catechumenus*“. 215, 22. Similar, 215, 36. 217: 13. Hom. II, 498, 27. Wulf. 33; 17. 35; 5. *Lives* XXX, 93. XXXI, 23. *Bout*. Ald. to Ald. Giles pp. 30, 39, 57.

*hē þone cyning gecrīstnade and hine eft æfter fæce mid fulwihtes bæðe aðwōh mid his þeode*, „*cum rex ipse catechizatus fonte baptismi cum sua gente ablueretur*.“ Bede 168, 1.

Note 1. „*Crīstnian*“ is undoubtedly a formal imitation of such verbs as Lat. *episcopare*, *monachare* (from *episcopus*, *monachus*) = O. E. *biscopian*, *muncian*.

Note 2. „*Crīstnian*“ signifies primarily the „*prima signatio*“ of the catechumens as distinguished from the baptism proper — „*fulluht*“, „*fulwian*“ (properly *full-wiht*, *ful-wihan* = the full or complete consecration, to consecrate fully).

The terms „*crīstnian*“ and „*fulwian*“ are, also, very rarely confused (see below). It should be noted, however, that „*crīstnian*“, in addition to its fundamental or proper sense, possesses likewise that of Mod. Eng. „*christen*“ i. e. to baptize an infant: *bonne se preost crīstnað ðæt cild, ðonne ādræfð hē ðone dæofol of ðām cilde; forðan ðe ælc hæðen man bið dæofles, ac þurh ðæt halige fulluht hē bið godes . . .* Hom. I, 304; 32.

We have here it is true, a parallel or comparison between the two conceptions „*crīstnað*“ and „*fulluht*“; but there is no confusion, for the „*crīstnung*“ of the child, while corresponding to the „*fulluht*“ of the adult, does not nevertheless coincide with it.

In two passages only „*crīstnian*“ really appears to have the same sense as „*fulwian*“. In the first case „*crīstnian*“ may, perhaps, be used poetically: *wæter crīstnað and elænsað cwicra menigo.* Sat. 395.

The second case refers to the substantive „*crīstnung*“:

*Papa Romanus . . . statuit si presbyter vel quicumque fuerit qui baptizaverit peccator esset, ministerium Spiritus Sancti esse nihilominus in gratia baptismi haudquaquam hominis in baptizando, „ . . . in ðære gife ðæs fulluhtes . . . næles ðæs mannes in crīstnunge.“* Con. Ecgb. 7 p. 348 (Ms. X).

The noun corresponding to the verb *crīstnian*, catechizare, is „*sēo crīstnung*“, the act of catechizing (cf. above Note 2., end, for secondary signification). Thus we read in Wulf. 33, 16: *on þære crīstnunge ðe man dēð ær ðām fulluhte.* Similar, 35, 21.

„To become a Christian by receiving the sacrament of baptism“ was expressed by „*crīsten gedōn beon*“, i. e. „to be made a Christian“. Thus Chr. A. anno 167.

The „*Catechumenus*“, or catechumen, was termed, in addition to „*gēcristnod*“ already mentioned, also rarely „*geleāfhlystend*“ or „*lār-hlystend*“, i. e. „hearer“ of the faith or doctrine. Both the latter expressions are in all probability partial imitation of the Lat. „*auditor*“, „*audiens*“ = *catechumenus*.

#### Examples.

„*catechumeni, geleāfhlestendes vel gēcristnodes*“. Bout. Ald.

„*Audientis*“ Giles Ald. p. 30.

„*catechumenos, gēcristnade, lār-hlestendere*“. Bout. Ald. Giles Ald. p. 39.

„*in catechumenorum gradu*“ — „*catechumenorum, geleāfhlestendra. auditorum.*“ Bout. Ald. to Giles Ald. p. 30.

„*catechumenus, (ge-)leāfhlestend*“. Bout. Ald.

§ 23. „*Christianitas*“, belief in Christ, adherence to Christianity, is chiefly expressed by „*crīstendōm*“ str. masc.



„state of being a Christian“, which, although rarely, also signifies the Christian world (Mod. Eng. „*Christendom*“) and the Christian Era<sup>1</sup>).

Secondarily and quite seldom the term „*crīstenes*“ str. fem., *christianitas*, Christianity is likewise found. Cf. O. H. G. „*kristentuom*“, O. N. „*kristendómr*“, Christianity.

### Examples.

#### a) *crīstendōm*:

*gīf hwā Crīstendōm wýrde oððe hāðendōm wéorðige . . . , gýlde . . . bē ðām ðe sýo dāde sý.* Edw. and Guthr. „Gesetze“ 2. *crīstendōm* and *cynedōm*. Æthelr. VIII, 42.

*bādon hine þæt hē him tō heora Crīstendōme and tō heora éaldrihtu gefultumede.* Boet. Sedgef. 7, 22.

*Deofolgild bið þæt man his drihten forlæte and his crīstendōm.* Lives XVII, 47.

&c.

The form with double inflection, *crīsten dōm*, occurs once:

*þā yfel ðe se cyning ðeodric wið þām crīstenan dōme . . . dyde.* Boet. Sedgef. 7, 14; Cf. the same phenomenon sub *hāðendōm*, and cf. also the frequent occurrence of O. N. *kristenn dómr*, *heiðenn dómr*, with double inflection (Fritzner, Ordbog<sup>2</sup>).

#### b) *crīstenes*:

*for ðære crīstnesse ðe ge únderfenge.* Durham Admonition (9<sup>th</sup> cent.), O. E. T. 176.

I shall cite here also the following favorite paraphrases for the Christian faith, the Christian religion:

„*sēo crīstene æfestnes (-nys)*“, — „*æfestnes*“ = „*religio*“. Thus Bede 38, 4 &c. From „*æ*“, law, and „*fæst*“, fast firm.

„*sē crīstena zelēafa*“ Bede 40. 21 etc. *Crīstes zelēafa* — extremely frequent in Bede; e. g. 4; 3, 10, 21, 25 &c.

Poetical are:

„*sēo godcūnde æfestnis, divīna religio*“. Bede 92; 7.

„*beorht zelēafa*“, the bright, illustrious faith. Cri. 483, An. 335.

<sup>1</sup>) For these two last-mentioned senses vid. sub „*crīstendōm*“, § 32.

### The Church.<sup>1)</sup>

§ 24. The O. E. renders Lat. „*ecclesia*“, „congregation of the Faithful“, then „union of all Christians“, by the following six terms:

1. *cirice* = Mod. Eng. „church“; cf. Ger. „*Kirche*“.
2. *gesomnung*, „assembly“, „gathering“.
3. *gelaðung*, *laðung*, „invited assembly“.
4. *gefèrræden*, „company“ or „society“.
5. *gezaderung*, *zaderung*, „gathering“, „assembly“.
6. *crīstendōm*, „Christendom“.

§ 25. 1. The most common designation for „*ecclesia*“ in all of its senses is „*cirice*“, wk. fem. (in Late O. E. more frequently *cyrice*, *cyrce*, *circe*).

Note. On the Forms:

Forms like „*cirica*“ are North. Thus the entire sing.: D. Rit. 18, 11. 30, 17. 30, 8. 45, 15, &c. Cf. Sievers, O. E. Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 276, Anm. 5.

The form „*ciericean*“ occurs Past. (H) 115, 8. „*cirecum*“. V. P. 25, 12. „*cirecan*“. O. E. T. Ct. 40, 6. „*chirece*“. Wulf. 232, 23 (H).

Raumer (p. 288), Pogatscher (§ 284), Kluge (in his „Wörterbuch“), Franck (Ety. Wtb. sub „*kerk*“), and others have judged correctly that we have in „*cirice*“ an old Common Germanic borrowed word of the Greek-Arian Church (Grk. *κῆριαχόν* or more probably the plural form *κῆριαχά*), which was first adopted by the Goths, and then through their mediation was passed on to the remaining Teutonic tribes.

On O. N. „*Kirkja*“ cf. below „Note“. Cf. also the lucid information given in the Oxford Dict. art. „*Church*“.

According to Morsbach (in Björkman's Scandinavian Loan-words in M. E., „Studien“ VII p. 148 Note) the groundform of O. E. *cirice*, M. E. *chirche* must have been \**kirkja*.

The meaning was originally that of Grk. *κῆριαχόν*, „the Lord's House“ (for the sing. *κῆριαχῆ* does not occur in this sense before the 11<sup>th</sup> century), which was, however, by degrees transferred in certain dialects — particularly in O. H. G. and O. E. — to the church congregation and the whole body of the Faithful generally.

<sup>1)</sup> The church building will be discussed in a future chapter entitled „Buildings“.

In order to express these two last-mentioned ideas, the Gothic makes use of the word „*aikklésjô*“ < Lat. „*ecclesia*“ — the Goth. (unrecorded!) \**kyreikô* must have denoted the building

§ 26. Note on O. N. *Kirkja*.

In my dissertation published a few years ago ('Einfluss des Christentums auf den Wortschatz des Altenglischen', Göttingen 1898), I expressed the opinion that O. N. *Kirkja* was probably not derived from O. E., but from O. S., my chief considerations being less of a phonological nature, than on account of the considerable divergence of the O. N. word from its supposed English prototype in signification; whereas there is an almost perfect coincidence in this respect of *Kirkja* with O. S. *Kirika*.

But notwithstanding this striking fact, it is hardly possible that *Kirkja* could have originated any-where but in O. E.; for, as was kindly pointed out to me by Dr. E. Björkman, the broken form *Kiurkia* of the Vestgöta Law could have originated only in an O. E. *cyrice*, *cyrce* — with *y*; on this sound-change cf. Noreen, O. N. Gram. § 127, 2, Anm. 4.

But it is still necessary to account for the wide difference in meaning of *cyrice* and *kirkja*; and in this connection I have the following remarks to offer.

*Kirkja* denotes, according to Kahle, *Acta Germanica* (pp. 19–20), only rarely and „erst in späterer Zeit“ the whole body of Christians, the Christian world; with rare exceptions, it signifies only the church building.<sup>1)</sup>

On the other hand, we find O. E. *cyrice* in the sense of Christian Church, congregation, in the most ancient texts; and this meaning is retained in full force in the entire literary period of O. E.

But what is the sense of O. S. *Kirika*? Almost identically

<sup>1)</sup> Kahle [cf. also Kahle, *Arkiv f. Nord. Fil.* N. F. 13, p. 18] uses in his dissertation only the prose literature; but the above remarks hold also for the poetry. Vid. the O. N. dictionaries of Cleasby-Vigfusson (*An Icelandic — English Dictionary*, &c. Oxford, 1874) and Fritzner (*Ordbog over dat gamle Norske Sprog*. Kristiania, 1886–96) in which the first example of *kirkja* = Christian Church is taken from the *Stjórn*, a paraphrase of the Old Test. composed about 1300; cf. Cleasby-Vig. p. XI.

the same as that of the O. N.; for *Kirika* is found in O. S. only in the sense of church-building. For 'Christian world', 'congregation', the terms *samanunga*, *sammunga* (assembly, ἐκκλησία) were employed. Cf. Heyne, „Kleinere Altniederdeutsche Denkmäler“ (Glossary).

These considerations, I think, make it highly probable that the word *Kirika* as conceived by the Saxon missionaries to the Northmen exerted a powerful influence upon the O. N. derivative of *cyrice* by narrowing its sense to church-building.

That O. S. exerted no inconsiderable influence upon the vocabulary of O. N. is shown by such words as O. N. *ǫlmusa* (O. S. *alamósna*), 'alms', and probably also *prófenda* (< M. L. G. *provende*). Cf. Kahle, Act. Germ. p. 13.

§ 27. As previously remarked, the meaning of „*cirice*“ as Christian congregation, the Christian Church, is quite old. Thus in the Laws of Æthelbirht, 1:

*godes feoh and ciricean XII gýlde*. Similar, Wihttræd: 1, 2, 3, &c.

*sēo godes circe beorhte blæeð*. Cri. 699. Similar, 703.

*ðære hālgan ciricean, ðæt is Crīstes folces gesomnung*. Past. 45.

*hē wæs ieldesð ofer ðā hālgan cirican*. Past. 115, 16.

*sēo cyrice sceal fēdan þe ðe æt hire éardiað*. Bl. 41, 27. Similar, 41, 26. 41, 35, &c.

In Ælfrie the favorite term is „*gelaðung*“ (q. v.), although „*cyrice*“ is found frequently:

*Wē habbað nū gesæd be godes cyrcan*. Hom. II, 594; 4, &c.

Wulfstan, on the contrary, almost always prefers „*cyrice*“:

*sēo heofonlice cyrice*. 154, 8, &c.

Note. For „*gelaðung*“ in Wulf. see the illustrations under „*gelaðung*“.

For „*cirice*“ as a single congregation cf. Bede 252, 16: *hē Wighéard Óngolcynnes ciricum tō ærcebiscope gehālgode* &c.

In the Psalms as well as in V. P. (1<sup>st</sup> half of the 9<sup>th</sup> century, according to Sweet: O. E. T. p. 184), „*cirice*“ occurs in the sense of congregation of the righteous, sacred meeting, Lat. „*ecclesia*“ in its more fundamental sense.

Thus Ps. 88, 4:

„on cyricean, in ecclesia sanctorum“. &c.

And in V. P.: „in medio ecclesiae laudabo te, in midle cirican“. 21; 23 &c.

§ 28. 2. *gesomnung*, *gesamnung*, str. f., O. H. G. *samanunga*, O. S. *samnunga*. Cf. also O. N. *samnaðr*, community, *congregatio*

Note. Other forms are: *gesamning*, *gesomning*, and in North. *somnung*.

In every-day life, O. E. *gesomnung* designated any „gathering“ or „meeting“, generally; or a „collection“ of objects. *sēo gesomnung ðāra ðeorwýrðra gimma*, „collection of precious stones“. Bl. 99, 27.

*In conlationibus, on gesamnungum*. Defens. 25, 16.

*conventus, conventio, gesamnung*. Wr. Wlk. 170, 40.

*lāðra gesamnung*, the assembly of the wicked, the hostile. Bl. 65, 20.

*synagoga potentium, gesomnung*. V. P. 85; 14. Similar, 7; 8. 39; 11, &c., Ine's „Gesetze“, Pref.

At times the word denotes likewise „bond“ or „union“:

*Æt ðām gíftan sceal mæsse-præost bēon mid rihte, sē sceal ... heora gesomnunge gederian*, „*debet eorum consortium adunare*“, i. e. the marriage-bond. „Gesetze“, Appendix VI, 8.

*sēo godes circe þurh gesomninga sōðes and ryhtes beorhte blāceð* (here = „union“). Cri. 700.

After the introduction of Christianity, however, the the word assumed the following additional conceptions:

a) The Church, the Catholic Church — very old:

*ic Osuulf ... ond béornðrýð mīn gemecca sellað ... ðæt lónd æt stānhāmstede ... gode allmehtgum ond ðære hālgon gesomnuncgæ*. O. E. T. Charters, 37, 3 (805—810).

*ðæt hālige hēafoð ðære hālgan gesomnunge, ðæt is Dryhten*, „*sanctum Caput Ecclesiae*“. Past. 101, 22. Similar, 31, 10. 43, 24. 45, 6. 65, 24 &c.

b) A congregation, a single church:

*Wæs Justus sē biscop þā gen lifigende and reahte ðā gesomnunge æt Hrōfescastre*, „*Justus Rhrofensem regebat ecclesiam*“. Bede 116, 27.

heora (i. e. þāra crīstenra) gesomnunga ealle wúrdon sōna tosceacerode, „eorum vero ecclesiae dispersae sunt“. Lives XXIII, 23.

hē sōna hire fēt mid tēarum oðran biddende ðæt hēo on ðā hālgan godes gesomnunga gebæde, „... ut oraret pro ecclesia“. Lives XXIII, B, 720.

c) A cloister community, monastic congregation, = „geferræden, „gegaderung“, (see below):

ðāra ārwyrdan gesomnnge in („ing“ M. S.) tō dām mynstre æt Wiltimne on ēche yrfe. Cart. Sax. (No. 917 (anno 955).

inseparabile Anglicae sodalitatis collegio perfrui. — collegio, gesamnunge. Bout. Ald. to Giles Ald. p. 15.

Cellarius monasterii eligatur de congregatione, „... of ðære gesamnunge“. Ben. R. 54, 7.

Similar, 119, 5: „ēac swylce þeah hē latōst tō mynstre cōme and gtemest sý on éndebyrdnesse ðære gesomnunge („þære geferrædene“. Wells Fragment).

d) A Jewish Synagogue — very frequent:

man eht eower, belæwende on gesamnungum, „Ye shall be persecuted and betrayed in the synagogues“. Hom. II, 540; 16.

hē cōm intō hyra gesomnunge, „venit in synagogam eorum“. Mt. 12; 9. lærende on hyra gesomnungum, „docens in synagogis eorum“. Mt. 4; 23. &c.

heah-gesamnung, „archi-synagoga“. Mk. 5; 22.

Note. It will be proper to mention here also the rare learned term „synagoga“ found but once:

lærende in heora synagogum vel somnungum, „... in synagogis“. Rush. Mt. 4; 23.

§ 29. 3. *gelaðung*, *laðung*, str. f. from *laðian*, *gelaðian*, „to summon“, „to invite“ (Ger. „laden“, „einladen“), differs from „gesomnung“ in this respect, 1) that it almost never appears in the literal or profane sense („Summons“, „meeting“, and the like), and 2) that while „gesomnung“ may also signify monastic community and synagogue, „gelaðung“ is found only in the sense of a Christian congregation, the Church. Cf. O. H. G. *ladunga*, str. f. „ecclesia“.

Note. The Glosses alone are acquainted with this word in its profane sense of „convocation“, „meeting“: *convocatio*, *gelaðung*. Ælfrie's Vocab. Mr. Wlk. 126, 23.

In a single passage of the Benedictine Rule, „*zelaðung*“ is found in the literal sense of „call“ „summons“:

*sio godcūnde zelaðung, evocatio divina.* Ben. R. 23, 14. Ben. R. Log. reads here: „*evocatio, gecīgednyss.*“

For the Alfredian and pre-Alfredian periods I have found no illustrations of the use of „*zelaðung*“; on the other hand in Ælfric the word is extremely popular.

Wulfstan employs the term but rarely, preferring the older expression „*cyrice*“.

In the Blickling Homilies „*zelaðung*“ is unknown, „*cirice*“, „*cyrice*“ being always used.

I have no illustrations from the poetry.

### Examples.

*zelaðung*:

*sē apostol Petrus āwrāt tō zelaðfulre zelaðunge.* Hom. II, 580; 13 and *ibid.* below: *Crīst is sē lybbenda stān . . . sē hylt ealle ðā gebytlu ðære zelaðfullan zelaðunge.*

*ic zelyfe on ðone Hālgan gāst and ðā hālgan zelaðunge.* Hom. II, 596; 15.

The examples from Wulf. are:

*riht zelaða āsprāng onmāng godes zelaðunge.* 294, 4.

*wē zelyfað ðæt hālig zelaðung sȳ ealra crīstenra manna tō ānum rihtan zelaðan.* 24, 10.

A single congregation:

*sē hālg Cūðberhtus Lāndisfarnensiscere zelaðunge leodbiscop.* Hom. II, 148, 22.

*laðung*:

*sē rōmanisca laðung, „ecclesia romana“.* Ben. R. Log. 44, 3.

*be Christes circean, þæt ys eall seo laðung.* Ælfric Grein 7, 43.

*Be crīste and be his laðunge.* Ass. (Æ) VII, 285.

*on godes laðunge.* 213.

*on hāligre laðunge, in sancta aecclesia.* Defens. 124.

§ 30. 4. *geferræden*, str. f. „*congregatio*“, „*societas*“, from „*sefer*“, society and „*rædenn*“, state, condition, of being.

This term is mainly employed to denote „community“, „society“, „comradeship“ in general. As an ecclesiastical expression it is first encountered in Late O. E., and then chiefly

in the sense of monastic community, congregation during divine service, rarely of the church congregation or membership.

The fundamental meaning, however, remains in every case clear and distinct.

The following are examples of *geferræden* in the ecclesiastical sense:

As a monastic community: *gif seō stōw ðæs nēode hæbbe and seō geferræden . . . ðæs gewilnize*, „... congregatio“. Ben. R. 125, 12. Similar: 67, 5. 126, 7 &c.

*on æghwilcan mynstre singe eall geferræden ætzædere heora saltere þā ðrȳ dagas* (this may also refer to the congregation at divine service). Wulf. 181, 20.

The congregation at divine service(?): *gif hit mycel geferræden is, sȳn hȳ mid antefene gesúngene; gif seō geferræden lýtel is, sȳn hȳ forðrihte bütan sōne gesúngene*. Ben. R. 41, 7, 8.

The Church (= congregation): *sege hyt geferrædene*, „dic ecclesiae“. Mt. 18, 17.

Note. The word is not to be found in Grein's „Sprachschatz“.

§ 31. 5. *gegaderung*, str. f., occurs almost exclusively in the sense of „bond“ or „union“, „collection of objects“, „assemblage of persons“ in general, and as „community of monastics“ (see „Monastic Clergy“). In the sense of „Church“ I possess but one sure illustration:

*Aecclesia, cyrce oððe zelæafful gaderung*: Wr. Wlk. 326, 7 (XI. Cent.).

In the following passage, the idea of „church“ is likewise probably conveyed:

*zehwær on hālgum godspelle þeos ándwérde zeladung is gehāten heofenan rice. Witodlice rihtwīstra manna gegaderung is gecweden heofonan rice*, „the congregation of the righteous“, i. e. the Church. Hom. I, 520; 10.

§ 32. 6. *crīstendom*. As we have already (§ 23) remarked, „*crīstendōm*“ — properly Christianity — signifies also at times Christendom, the Church, the Christian Era.

This development of meaning may be ascribed either to the Lat. prototype „*christianitas*“ (the Christian religion, the



Christian World), or perhaps merely to the usual passage from the abstract to the concrete. Cf. for the M. E. the following illustrations:

*nu wærð swā micel dwýld on Chrīstendōm swā hit nāfre ær ne wæs.* Chron. anno 1129.

„*As wel in Cristendōm as hēthenesse*“. Chaucer, Prol. Cant. T. 49.

*crīstendōm* as Mod. Eng. Christendom:

*Ēalā, cwæð Orosius, on hū micelre dysignesne men nu sindon on þeosan crīstendōme!* Oros. 136, 17.

*Hwær is nū on ænigān crīstendōme . . . ?* „Where in all Christendom?“ Oros. 40, 27.

*Nū is ðes dæg gehālgod hyre tō wurðmynte on eallum crīstendōme.* Ass. (Æ) III, 29 et seq.

*Hēafod āngelcynnes and crīstendōmes.* Chron. C. anno 1011.  
*in exordium ecclesiae, „on ānginne crīstendōmes*“. Ben. R. (F.), 136, 7.

Perhaps also the following passages belong here:

*āwācyge sē crīstendōm, sōna scylfð sē cynedōm,* „If the Church grows weak, the kingdom will fall.“ Wulf. 267, 23.

*hē . . . þurh hī* (sc. *þā apostolas*) *ealne crīstendōm āstealde.* Hom. I, 258; 12.

*Sē crīstendōm wēox wel on heora tīman.* Ælfric Grein 264, 7.

Note 1. *Cristendōm* = Mod. Eng. „Christendom“ is not found earlier than the year 1131, acc. to the „Oxford Dict.“.

Note 2. On „*crīstendōm*“ = „*ecclesia*“.

Scattering and late, the word appears to relate likewise to the ecclesiastical privileges (attendance, mass, and the like). Cf.:

*bēo hē ūtlah wið god and āmānsumad fram eallum Crīstendōme,* „let him be outlawed and excommunicated from all the privileges of the Church.“ Wulf. 271, 25. Very similar to this is Cnut's Manifesto of the year 1020: *bēo hē āmāsumod fram eallum crīstendōme.* Earle, Land. Ch. p. 231.

*from eallum crīstendōme bēon āworpen.* Eccl. Inst. 27 (2×).

Of *Crīstendōm* in this sense the Oxford Dict. gives no illustration prior to the year 1297.

The passages cited above would thus furnish vouchers for this meaning of the word at a much earlier period, in fact in genuine O. E. times.

„*Crīstendōm*“ as „the Christian Era“:

*Eft on ðām cristendōme wæs Constantinus sē forma cāsere. Ælfric Grein 264, 4.*

*ðā ðe secgað ðæt þeos world sȳ nū wyrse on þysan cristendōme þonne hīo ær on ðæm hæðenscype wære. Oros. 40, 25. Very similar, Oros. 48, 18; 28. 50, 2 and elsewhere.*

Note 3. The Oxford Dict. designates *cristendōm* in this sense as rare and obsolete, and gives as its first illustration a passage from the year 1340.

§ 33. The loan-word *seonoð* (*sionoð*, *synoð*, *senoð*, *sinod*), a meeting of any kind; a synod of the church, should be mentioned here.

*seonoð* &c. is from Lat. *synodus*, but, as the *ð* instead of *d* shows, through the Romance; cf. sub *ziūþeas* § 3, Note 1, and Sievers' Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 199, 2 Anm. 3. Cf. also Sievers' Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 69 for the *e* in the form *senoð*.

#### Examples.

*þā wūrdon monega seonoðas [synoðas, M. S. H.] . . . hālegra biseþa, „ . . . plures synodus“. Ælfr. Einl. 49, 7. Similar: *sinod*. Edm. I. Prol.*

*on ðām miclan synoð æt Grēatanleage; on þām wæs se ærceþisceop Wulfhelme. Æthelstan II, 26, 3 (= Liebermann 'Epilog').*

Cf. also *Senod-bōc*, a 'synod-book' or synodal i. e. a book containing the decrees of an ecclesiastical synod. Ælfr. Einl. 49, § 8.

*Synoð* in a secular sense:

*wille fæder engla . . . seonoð zehēgan . . . ðēman mid ryhte. Phoenix 493.*

*þær hīz tō þēra iūdēa synoðe cōmon, „to the council of the Jews“. Nicod. 486, 27.*

## Chapter 2.

### The departed members of the Church.

#### § 34. 1. The Virgin Mary.

The simplest designation of the Virgin Mary in use among the Anglo-Saxons was that which is likewise universal to day, viz. „Virgin Mary“.

For „virgin“ early O. E. employs chiefly *fæmne* wf. (Lat. *femina*), ‘*virgo*’, a word denoting in late O. E. mostly ‘*femina*’, woman, in general. In this latter period we find for ‘virgin’ chiefly the word *mæden*, originally *mægden*, ‘*puella*’, maiden, servant; then ‘*virgo*’ in general.

O. E. *mægden* is a diminutive of *mægð* (Germ. ‘*Magd*’), *femina*, *virgo*, a term found in every Germanic language excepting the Norse; cf. Goth. *magaps*, O. H. G. *magad* and *magatin*, O. S. *magath*. See Kluge’s ‘Wtb.’ for the etymology.

*Mægð* (*mæged*), also, is applied in O. E. to Mary; but, like the similarly used *meowle* (*virgo*), is poetic; cf. below.

Note 1. That, however, the earlier meaning of *fæmne* as ‘*virgo*’, ‘*puella*’, was preserved even in late O. E. is clearly seen in the following passages:

*Nū ic hālsige þā heofontūcan fæmnan sca marian.* A.-S. Min. Log. XI, 48 (beginning of 11<sup>th</sup> century).

*fæmne oncnāwan*, „*virgo casta*“. Lives 23 B, 436. Similar, 445, 452. Ass. XV, 55, &c.

*Ȝif he oðres cēorles wif wemme, oððe fæmnan*, „... *vel puellam*“. Con. Ecgb. 14.

*Munuc oððe gehālgod fæmne*, „*monachus vel puella consecrata*“. Con. Ecgb. 13.

*pro virginibus corona virginibus deputatur*, „*for mædenhādes cynehelme fæmnum*“. Defens. 69, 16.

*ðurh þā eadigan fæmnan Scā marian.* Wulf. 144 etc., etc. in general.

Note 2. Peculiar to the North.-Merc. is the interesting compound *hehstáld*, 'virgin', W. S. *hago-stéald* (Germ. *Hagestolz*), a bachelor. The fundamental notion is 'possessor of a haw or hedge' (*haga*), and refers to the ancient Germanic law of primogeniture, according to which the eldest son inherited the homestead, the others receiving only a small patch of land („haw“).

As the latter were thus brought into a state of dependence upon the bounty of the elder brother, they were unable to marry.

Thus arose the further notion of 'unmarried person', then '*virgo*', '*caeleps*'. Thus we have in the O. E. glosses: *celeps*, *hægstéald man*. Wr. W. 283, 17. 370, 11. 372, 26.

For the same evolution in O. H. G. cf. Kluge, Wörterbuch: „*Hagestolz*“.

Referring to the Virgin Mary we find *hehstéald* in the following passages:

In Rush.: *noma ðære hehstálde maria*. Lk. 1, 27.

In Lind.: *ad virginem desponsatam et nomen virginis Mariam*, „tō hehstálde gewōdedd vel fæstnad & noma ðære hehstáldes [sc. *Maria*]. Lk. 1, 27.

*ut virginem virgo servaret*, „þætte þā hehstáld hehstáld gehéalde“. Jo. p. 1, 5.

*beate virginis*, „eades hehstáldes (*maria*)“. D. Rit. 51, 16.

„*virgo*“, in general: D. Rit. 47, 19 etc. Lind. Mt. p. 13, 2 etc.

§ 35. Of the numerous expressions that I have found in O. E. literature the following may be cited:

'*Sancta*' or '*Sancte Maria*', usually abbreviated as '*Sca. Maria*', '*Sce. Maria*'.

Thus passim in the „Laws“: Æthelr. V, 14. VI, 22. Cnut I, 16 etc.

Blick. Hom. 11, 10 etc. etc.

*sēo eadige fæmne*, *scā Maria* — a very popular expression — 'the Blessed Virgin'. Bede 292, 8. Blick. Hom. 9, 18. Wulfst. 144, 33.

*sēo hālige fæmne*, 'the Holy Virgin'. Blick. Hom. 5; 29, 36 etc.

*ðæt mæden Maria*. Ælf. Hom. I, 32, 144.

*ðæt clæne mæden*, „the pure Virgin“, extremely frequent: Wulf. 126, 8. 121, 8, 15, 13. 121, 11.

Similar: *sēo unwemme fæmne*, „the immaculate Virgin“. Blick. Hom. 105, 19. *ðæt mære mæden*, „the illustrious Virgin“. Wulf. 14, 17. 22, 4.

More or less peculiar to poetry are such expressions as: *sēo beorhte (Maria)*, „the Bright One“. El. 783.

*sēo clāneste cwēn ofer éorðan.* Cri. 276.

*sēo æðele cwēn.* Cri. 1199.

*cwēna sēlost.* Men. 168.

From *cwēn* gentlewoman, lady of birth.

*wīfa wūldor*, „Glory of women“. Men. 149.

*ealra fæmnena wyn*, „Joy of all virgins.“ Hy. 3, 26.

Similar: *ēalā, wīfa wynn!* Cri. 71.

*Ēalā þū, hlæfdige, ealles middan — éardes cwēn!* „*Domina mi! Domina!*“ Lives 23 B, 487.

*ðæt þū sie hlæfdige hālgum meahum wūldorweorudes and worldcūndra hāda under heofenum and helwara!* „Mistress of the inhabitants of Heaven, Earth and Hell.“ Cri. 284.

As *mægð* and *mæg* (f. properly = kinswoman), *virgo, femina: mægð Maria!* Cri. 176.

*ēalā, fæmne geóng, mægð Maria!* Cri. 35. 175.

*mægð mānes lēas*, „without reproach“. Cri. 36.

*mægð unmmæle*, „immaculate“. Cri. 721.

*mægð mōðhwatu*, ‘*virgo strenua animi*’. Hy. 11, 16.

*sēo ēadige mæg.* Cri. 87.

As the Heavenly Bride, „*brȳð*“:

*brȳð bēaga hroden*, „Bride adorned with a diadem“. Cri. 292.

*brȳð þæs sēlestan swegles bryttan*, „Bride of the most excellent Dispenser of the sky“. Cri. 280.

As „Temple of the Son of God“:

*bēarn ēacen godes. Nū ic his tempel eam.* Cri. 206.

For a more extended list of expressions vid. Diss. Jansen, p. 18 et seq.

The Virgin, in her quality of „Mother of God“, is called:

*Marie, mōdur Crīstes.* Reisesegen VIII, 17. Lives III, 252.

*Maria godes cynnestre* (= *cennestre*). Ælf. Hom. I, 354, 20.

*ðere eadigan Marian godes cennestran.* I, 436, 5.

*ðære zesæligan godes cennestran.* I, 438; 6. 546, 8. —

From *cennestre*, -an, wf., *matrix, mater*; *cennan*, to bear.

*þære hālgan cennestran*, „*sanctae Dei genetricis*“. Lives 23 B, 470. Very similar: 23 B, 430, 486, 545, 566, etc. in Ælfrie.

All these expressions, whether of prose or poetry, bear eloquent witness to the pious adoration of the Anglo-Saxon for the Virgin mother of Jesus.

Furthermore, as might be expected, the prose terms reflect in a high degree — the poetic much less so — those figures of speech which were in vogue in the ecclesiastical Latin of the time. Compare A.-S. *sancta*, *eadig*, *gesælig*, *hālig*, *clæne*, *unwem*, *mānesleas*, *unmæle*, *Hlæfdige*, *cwēn*, *mōdur*, *cennestre*.

On the other hand such expressions as *sēo beorhte Maria*, *sēo æðele cwēn*, *wīfa wūldor*, *fæmnena wyn*, *wīfa wyn*, we may claim as native products.

### § 36. 2. Prophets.

The O. E. term for prophet is everywhere and for all periods *witega*, *witga*, *wm*. The word is properly a Common Westgermanic substantive formed from the adj. A.-S. *witig*, German. *\*witags*, „wise“, root *wīt-* (Gr. *ΐδ-*), which latter forms a gradation-series with O. E. *wāt* (I „wot“), Germanic *\*wait* (Gr. *ΐδ-α*). O. H. G. *wizzago*, N. H. G. *Weissager*, shows a popular contamination with *sagen*, to say.

The fundamental meaning of *witega* was, then, Wise One, One who Knows, originally, perhaps, „Seer“; cf. O. H. G. *wizac* which still had the meaning „seeing“, „marking“, „divining“, in the compound *fora-wizac*, *praesagus*. On the suffix *-ig*, *-ag*, vid. Kluge: „Nomin. Stammbildungslehre“, § 202—209.

A few examples will suffice:

*hālige witegan*. Christi Höllen. 95.

*Drihten cūdde ðurh þone wītgan*. Past. 27, 13.

*Propheta, witega*. Ben. R. 3, 13.

*swā sē witega sánz*. Men. 59.

„*Witega*“ can likewise denote heathen prophets, Magi: thus we have: „*wītgan*“, the Magi. Dan. 41.

*þā answerode wulfheort cyning* (i. e. Nebuchadrezzar) *wit-gum sīnum*. Dan. 135.

The feminine of *witega*, *witegestre* (cf. *cenn-estre* ‘genetrix’) ‘prophetess’, occurs once:

*Tyn mædena . . . þē man hēt Sibillas, þæt synd witegestran*. Ælf. Grein 10, 31.

§ 37. Poetic and rare for prophet is *boda-an*, i. e. ‘messenger’, Ger. *Bote*, „one who proclaims a (divine) message — *bodscipe*“, i. e. = *propheta* in the original sense of ‘proclaimer’, ‘utterer’, *προφήτης*, from *φημί*, ‘I say’.

Thus Manna mōd 4:

*mē frōd wita on fýrndagum sægde, snottor ār, súndor-wúndra fela; wórdhórd onwrēah wītgan lārum, béorn bōca, glēaw, bodan ærcwide.*

In the same sense, the derivative *spellboda*, 'proclaimer of message', from *spell*, 'narration', '*historia*', '*sermo*':

*Daniel . . . godes spelboda.* Dan. 533, 743.

*Godes spelboda* (Job considered as a prophet, cf. 549) Phoen. 571.

*geāra iū godes spelbodan* (= the Apostles as prophets) . . . *þurh witedōm eal āncmdon swā hit nū gónged.* Gū. 11.

The term *Godes spelbodan* is used, further, in A.-S. poetry to designate:

The three youths in the fiery furnace: Dan. 230, 465.

The angels: Gen. 2494.

The angel Gabriel: Cri. 336.

§ 38. Wulfstan employs the learned form *propheta*, but titularly and only in one passage:

*ðæs ðīng gewitegode Isaias propheta be Judēan.* Wulf. 48.

In the Latin this combination is very frequent: *Isaias propheta*, *Samuel propheta*, etc. whence the corresponding O. E. phrase.

§ 39. Prophesying, prophecy, is *witegung* and *witedōm* (*witigdōm*), both formed from *witeg-a*; in addition to these we find in the Aldhelm glosses the expression *forewitegung* i. e. 'foreknowledge'.

#### Examples.

*sē grimma witedōm ðæs biscepes wæs gefylled, „dira antistētis praesagia“.* Bede 198, 12.

*þurh witedōmes gāst, „per prophetiae spiritum“.* Bede 200, 20.

*eloquia, sermones, witedōmas.* Bout. Ald.: *divina Prophetarum oracula.* Giles Ald. p. 4.

*divinorum eloquiorum, witedōma vel godcúndra spreca.* Bout. Ald.: *oraculorum.* Ald. Giles p. 21.<sup>1)</sup>

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. also Napier, Old English Glosses.]

*þurh witzgðom wihte æþencean.* Dan. 146.

*witedðom* occurs further: Cri. 212. El. 1153. Phoen. 548.

Ga. 12.

*ðæt sý gefylled Esaias witegung, „prophetia Esaiæ“.*

Mt. 13, 14.

In Grein *witegung* does not appear.

*vaticinatione, forewitegunge.* Bout. Ald. Giles Ald. p. 14.

*praesagiorum, forewitegunge.* Bout. Ald. Giles Ald. p. 7.<sup>1)</sup>

From *witega*, prophet, is formed the verb *witegan*, to prophesy:

*hæ spræc þurh witegan þe witegodon ýmbe Crīst.* Ælf.

Grein 2, 18.

*Drihten! Drihten! hū ne witegode wē on þinum naman?*

*„nonne in nomine tuo prophetavimus?“* Mt. 7, 22.

§ 40. In order to designate the astrologers and Magi of the Chaldeans the compounds *tungol-witga* i. e. 'star-prophet', 'astro-logus', and *dēofol-witga* 'devil's prophet', magician; (cf. Lat. 'vates diabolicus') were formed.

Note. O. E. *dēofol* 'devil' is derived from Gr. Lat. *diabolus* probably through the medium of Gothic. Vid. Kluge in 'Wörterbuch' under 'Teufel', and Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, 359.

#### Examples.

*þā túngol-witegan fram east-dæle, Magi.* Mt. 2, 1.<sup>1)</sup>

*dēofulwītgan.* Dan. 128 (only passage in Grein).

#### § 41. 3. Patriarchs.

The Lat. *patriarcha* is rendered in O. E. chiefly by *hēah-fæder*, lit. 'High-father', in O. H. G. *hōhfater*. In addition to the above, the term *éald-fæder*, 'Old father', is sometimes used for patriarch, O. H. G. *Altater*, O. N. *aldarfaðer*. Cf. also § 142.

#### Examples.

*Jacobus sē hēahfæder.* Past. 101, 15.

*Jacob gestrýnde twelf suna, ðā sind gehātene twelf hēahfæderas.* Hom. II 190, 25.

*hū Jacob cwæð, sē hēahfæder.* Athelstan. I § 2. Lat. 'pater excelsus'.

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. also Napier, Old English Glosses.]



*oð Abrahames timan þæs éaldan hēahfæderes.* Ælf. Grein 4, 6.

Etc. Etc.

In poetry:

*hēahfæderas.* An. 877. Similar: Exod. 357. Hð. 47. *betweox hēahfæderum and hāligum witegum.* Vom jüngsten Tage. 284. Etc.

In both poetry and Prose we find *hēahfæder* at times employed as an appellative of God the Father (cf. O. H. G. *hōh-fater*, Lat. '*pater excelsus*' = *deus*); see Wulfstan 230, 29. Lind. Rush. Mk. 14, 36. Kreuz 134.

Note. For *hēah-fæder* = „*Archimandrita*“ vid. 'Abbot'; in the sense of „patriarch of the Church“ vid. 'patriarch' § 142.

§ 42. *Éald-fæder* as 'patriarch':

*þæt þæt þa éaldfæderas æfter lāngsumere elcunge únder-féngon.* Hom. II 80, 20. Further: II 80, 12.

*legat unus collationes vel vitas patrum, oððe on éaldfædera lifa.* Ben. R. Log. 74, 11. Very similar Ben. R.<sup>1)</sup>

*Éaldfæder* occurs also in the sense of 'forefather' generally:

*Þu . . . forðfæst . . . tō þinum éaldfæderum, ad patres tuos.* Gen. Grein 15, 15.

*Drihten ðā forgeaf Israhēla béarnum eallne þone éard swā swā hē ær behet heora éaldfæderum, „patribus eorum“.* Jos. 21, 41. Similar, Nicod. 504, 24.

Note 1. Declined in each member the compound '*éald fæder*' signifies 'grandfather':

*hzo* (i. e. Ruth) *wearð geæwnod Iessan éaldan fæder.* Ælf. Grein 6. i. e. 'Boaz, the grandfather of Jesse'. Similar: Chron. D, 1016.

Note 2. I have been unable to discover anywhere in A.-S. a \**hæafod-fæder*, corresponding to the Old Norse *høfðafæder*.

True, Bos. Toll. gives us a '*hæafodfæder*' but entirely without warrant: Bos. Toller copies from Lye, Lye from Somner; Somner quotes no passage. Even Taranger (p. 407) commits the same blunder.

§ 43. 4. The Apostles.

In order to designate the term 'apostle' the A.-S. adopts the Latin word in the forms *apostol* and, with aphaeresis of the *a*, *postol* (rare).

<sup>1)</sup> *Éaldfæder* in the two last passages can mean one of the Christian Fathers.

On the form *postol* cf. Pogatscher § 246.

Note. Very rare are the forms: *apastol* Bede 418, 28 and *apostel*: *ða twelf apostelas*. Ælfrie's Past. 10, 12.

Besides *apostol* we find, scattered or poetic, native expressions; viz. *ærendwreca*, *-wraca*, *-raca*, 'messenger', and *spellboda*, 'message-relater', 'messenger'; but these terms are employed principally to denote messengers generally and concern us in this place, therefore, but little.

*Apostol* (*postol*) st. m., inflected like an ordinary *a*-stem, save that in the plural, besides *apostolas*, the learned form *apostoli*, *ða apostoli*, occurs.

This plural is especially liked by Ælfrie. Cf. Hom. II 482, 18, 25. 486, 25 etc.; and Blickling Hom. 229, 2. For parallel cases vid. *discipulus*, *discipul*, and under 'Pharisees', 'Jews'.

§ 44. *Postol* st. m., according to Kahle, p. 12, the prototype of O. N. *postole*, is inflected precisely like *apostol*.

This form occurs but twice: viz. in the North. and Merc. Gospels, but the pronunciation '*postol*' must have been very much in vogue among the people even if it were not generally recognized by the written language, for otherwise it is incredible that it should have been adopted by a foreign tongue in preference to the more usual '*apostol*': cf. O. N. *postole* < O. E. *postol*.

#### Examples.

*Ðāra postolra*. Lind. Lk. p. 2, 2.

*ða ðe cwædun ðās tō ðām postolum*. Rush. Lk. 24, 10.

Note. In contrast to O. E. and O. N., the O. H. G. prefers the native '*boto*' (Ger. *Bote*), '*apostolus*'. Only rarely we find the word '*postul*' < *apostolus*.

§ 45. *ærendwreca* (*-wraca*, *-raca*) wm., from *ærend* (Mod. Eng. *errand*) message — probably related to *ār*, Goth. *airus*, messenger — and *wreccan*, probably originally perform, execute.

Note. On the forms.

The numerous forms fall naturally into three groups:

1) *-wreca*: *ærendwreca*, *ērendwreca*, *ērenwreca*, *ērendwrica*,

2) *-wraça*: *ærendwraça*, *zrendwraça*, *zrendwreaca*, *ærendwraça*.

3) *-raca*: *ærendraca*, *zrendraca*, *ærenddraca*.

Sweet (Past. p. 472) observes in explanation of the later form *-raca*: 'the vowel-change [i. e. *-raca* for *-wreca*] seems to point to some confusion with the word *wrecca*, exile'.

To this Kluge remarks (PBB 8, p. 528) that he can not perceive how such a confusion could arise, adding: 'Jetzt ergibt sich, dass thatsächlich im späteren ae. herrschende *ærendraca* ein jüngerer Substitut für *ærendwreca* ist; bei dem Aussterben der Formeln mit *-wreca* in der Bedeutung ausführen, thun, lag *racu*, 'Erzählung', als Anknüpfung für Umdentung nahe'.

As far as *-raca* is concerned Kluge's explanation may be accepted as correct, as against Sweet who, besides, considers the *-raca* forms to be the normal and the '*w*' in *wreca*, something 'abnormal'.

Thus groups 1) and 3) are disposed of. The second remains however unexplained and appears not to have been considered by K. at all.

Here we have, perhaps, a case of formal contamination of the old form *ærendwreca* with the new *ærendraca*, the resultant being the mixed form *ærendwraça*. This reciprocal influence was much facilitated by the fact that the forms *-wreca* and *-raca* were long used contemporaneously and in the same dialects.

But probably Pogatscher (Anz. f. d. Altertum 1899, p. 16) is right in assuming *ærendwraça* (with *a*) to be the older form, which is suggested by the corresponding verb *ærend(w)reccan* (= *ærendian*; cf. mhg. *botescheften*).

Bede uses chiefly *ærendwreca* (44, 11. 62, 30. 88, 30. 116, 6 etc.); likewise Blick. (3. 7. 9 etc.). Lind. has *zrendwreca* (see Cook for all the passages; once *zren-wreca*: Mk. p. 2, 8) and *zrendraca*: Mt. p. 16, 10. Ælfrie employs *ærendraca* (Lives 19, 34. 10, 124 etc. Hom. II 482, 30. 120, 30. 130, 30 etc.) which occurs, however, also: Bede 44, 24. 468, 12. Oros. 44, 7, 20. 92, 6, 9. 104, 13, 16 etc. Past. 38, 3 (C). Nicod. 490, 23. 490, 30.

*ærenddraca* occurs: Oros. 5, 1. Past. 39, 3. Bede 50, 26. 53, 5.

*ærendwraça*: Bede 170, 22. 232, 8. Oros. 3, 3.

*zrendwraça*: D. Rit. 60, 4 (otherwise *-wreca*).

*zrendwraçu*, '*legatio*': Rush. Lk. 14, 32.

*zrend-wreacu*: Rush. Lk. 9, 52.

*zrendwrica*: O. E. T. 180, 10 (about A. D. 900 — 'apparently Kentish', Sweet).

*zrendwreoca*: Rush. Lk. 19, 14.

*ærendwreça*: Bede 90, 26.

The passages in which *ærendwreca* occurs in the sense 'apostle' are the following:

*Apostolus*, *ærendraca*. Ælfrie's Voc. Wr. W. 155, 5.

*Ego enim sum minimus omnium apostolorum qui non*

*sum dignus vocari apostolus: ic f'rðon (= forðon) am læsest allra aposto' (= apostola), se ðe ic ne am wýrðe ðætte ic se zicliopad ærendwraça. D. Rit. 60, 3 et seq.*

*beati Andreae apostoli tui: ærendwrecæs ðines. D. Rit. 79, 8.*

*beatus Andreas apostolus: eadga And' (= Andreas) ærend' (= erendwreça). D. Rit. 79, 11. D. Rit. has everywhere else 'apostol'.*

*hē apostolas gecēas þæt sind ærendraçan. Ælfrie Grein 13.*

*non est servus major domino suo; neque apostolus major est eo qui misit cum: . . . nē se ærendraca ðonne sēla, nē ðonne wurðra ðonne se ðe hine sēndeð. Ass. XIII, 205.*

*ne ærendraca nys mærra þonne se ðe hyne sēnde. Jo. 13, 16 ('apostol': Rush. Lind.).*

§ 46. *Spelboda* (*spellboda*) *wm.*, from *spell* (*spel*) report, narrative, and *boda* messenger (vid. § 37). In the sense 'apostle' the word is found but once, in poetry:

*ȝodes spelbodan* (the Apostles considered as prophets — cf. § 37). *Gu. 11.*

§ 47. The rank, or office, of an apostle is expressed by *-hād* (Ger. *-heit*), 'office', Mod. Eng. *-hood*: *apostolhād*.

My only examples are from the poetry: *Ap. 14. Andreas 1651.*

We must note finally the adjective *apostolic*, apostolic, the suffix of which, *-lic*, is properly speaking identical with the O. E. noun *lic*, a body, a corpse; Ger. *Leiche* (as suffix: *-lich*), Goth. *-leiks*.

A few passages will serve as examples:

*þeaw þæs apostolican seðles*, the custom of the Apostolic See. *Bede 64, 14.*

*mid ðām apostolican werode. Wulf. 242, 19.*

### Epithets of the Apostles.

§ 48. Frequently we find them as teachers, 'teachers of the people' — 'of the nations', *læreowas*. The latter expression, however, concerns principally St. Paul — the 'Apostle of the Gentiles':

(*Paulus*) is gecweden ealra ðeoda lāreow. Hom. I, 384, 22. II, 332, 6.

sē ðeoda lāreow sǣde (i. e. Paul). Ibid. II, 330, 19 Etc. frequently.

sē æðela lāreow, 'the noble Teacher' (Paul). Past. 222, 7. folca lāreow (James). Men. 135 = Heiligenkal. 135.

Cf. the same term used of Christ.

In the following epitheta we seem to breathe again the very spirit of the Anglo-Saxon epics:

ōrettmæczas, warriors -ōret, battle: An. 664.

ōretta, warrior, soldier: béorn beaduwe héard, ānræd ōretta (= Andreas). An. 982 et seq.

eadiȝ ōretta (= Guthlac): Gū. 147.

cristes cempa, Soldier of Christ (= Andreas): An. 991.

beadurōf, stern in battle: An. 96 and 145 (= Apostle Matthew).

§ 49. We are now to consider the Apostles as disciples i. e. the Disciples of Christ.

The O. E. rendition of the Latin *discipulus* is marked by much variation, according as the Disciples were conceived of as subordinates, the servants, of Christ or as his pupils.

In this connection we note the following words:

1. *cniht*: Youth (Past., seldom; New Test., rare; Nicod. 3 ×).  
2. *discipul* (Bede, frequent; Rush. Lind., rare; Blick. Hom., frequent; Ælfrie and Wulf. rare).

3. *folgere*, follower (Ælfrie, rare; poetry once).

4. *gíngra*, Ger. *Jünger* (Bede, frequent; Ælfrie, ditto; Oros., Blick., less frequent; Poetry, ditto; Past., several times).

5. *hīeremon*, Lat. *auditor*, *subditus* (great favorite in Past.; several times in Eccl. Inst.).

6. *lǣringman*, Lat. *discipulus* (Ben. R., once).

7. *léornere*, learner, pupil (very freq. in Rush. Matth.; Blick., several times; Ælfrie, once).

8. *léorningcniht*, pupil, disciple (Bede, Wulfstan, Defensor, Nicod., rare; Ælfrie and W. S. Gospels, very frequent; Ben. R., once).

9. *léorningman*, pupil (Bede, Ælfrie, Eccl. Inst., Ben. R., scattered).

10. *únderþeodda*, *-þeodd* (Past., Ælfrie, Defens., Ben. R.), subject.

11. *þegn*, servant, Lat. *minister* (Lind., Rush., very frequent; Ælfred, Ælfrie, Blick., rather frequent; Wulf., frequent; rare in poetry).

Exclusively Northumbrian:

1. *ámbeht*.

2. *émbehtmonn*.

3. *fōstring*.

4. *lārcneht*.

§ 50. This numerous terminology contains but one borrowed word viz. *discipul*; the others are native products (yet see below under *ámbeht*!).

As new formations, patterned after Lat. *discipulus*, properly young learner, little learner, we may consider *léorningcniht*, *lārcneht*, *léorningman*, *lāringman*. *Léornere*, on the contrary, is original O. E.

In *hīeremon* and *únderþeodd(a)* the influence of *subjectus*, *subditus* (Subject, Disciple) appears.

In the case of *gingra*, *cniht*, *þegn*, *folgere*, *ámbeht* and *fōstring*, on the other hand, we have ancient Teutonic conceptions; cf. the separate articles below.

The above list also admits, on the whole, a temporal division inasmuch as the words *gingra*, *hīeremon*, *cniht*, *discipul*, *léornere* and *þegn* are, in the above senses, more or less peculiar to the older epochs of O. E., while the remainder appear chiefly in later O. E.

Note. The words „the remainder“ do not include special North. terms, since all material which might serve as a basis for comparison is wanting here.

§ 51. 1. *cniht* (cf. Mod. Eng. *Knight*, Ger. *Knecht*), youth, disciple:

[*crīst*] *ðonne wólde cniht bion and wólde ðæt hine mon lærde*. Past. 385, 27.

[*Paulus*] *manode his cneohht: discipulum*. Past. 97, 12. Very similar: Past. 385, 30. Further, of disciples generally: Past. 457, 25, 31. 169, 16. 311, 16. Mk. 6, 29.

### Disciples of Christ:

*æt Iudas his āgenum cnyhte.* Ass. XVI, 170. Further: Ass. XVI, 60. Wulf. 17, 10 et seq. Past. 385, 3. Mk. 3, 9. Lk. 19, 29. Nic. 476, 2, 12. 486, 17. 514, 22.

*Cniht* is not found in this sense in poetry.

### § 52. 2. *discipul*, -us, Lat. *discipulus*:

The following passages will illustrate the O.E. usage in the different cases:

nom. sg., *Bōsles discipul & þegn*: „*discipulus et minister sacerdotis Boisili*“. Bede 410, 7.

*Crīstes discipul.* Wulf. 257, 9 (A). Further: Blick. 233, 35. Mt. Lind. 27, 57. Lk. Lind. p. 2, 1. 6, 40.

*Iohannes . . . . his discipulus.* Ass. (Æ) 6, 13.

*discipulus apostoles*: „*discipulus apostoli Pauli*“. Mt. Lind. p. 8, 14.

nom. plur. *discipulas*: Ass. 13, 232. Mt. Rush. 8, 25. 12, 2. 28, 7, 8, 13. Mt. Lind. 26, 8. Bede 258, 16.

nom. plur. *discipuli*: *his discipuli*. Hom. I 548, 25. Mt. Rush. 5, 1. Further: Blick. 233, 15. Ælfrie, Herrig Vol. 101, p. 315.

dat. plur. *discipulum*: *ūsser Drihten Hælende Crīst . . . . séalde his discipulum*. Bede 310, 26 etc. Hom. II 266, 320, 13. Ass. (Æ) 1, 148 etc. Mt. Rush. 26, 26. Ælfrie Grein 14, 25. Blick. 225, 7, 11. 231, 29, 30 etc. Ælfrie Interr. 486.

With syncope of the ‘u’: *ðām disciplum*. Mt. Lind. 26, 40.

gen. plur.: *ðāra discipula*. Ass. 13, 237.

Not infrequently Latin case-endings are found, often without any regard to the demands of Latin grammar. Thus we have in Blick. *discipulos* both as acc. plur. (225, 13) and as nom. plur. (227, 11). Similarly, as acc. plur. *discipuli*: Blick. 231, 18. 235, 15 etc. Cf. Bede 148, 32: *from ðæs discipuli*: „*a cuius discipulis*“.

Note. That this confusion of the learned forms did not result from a mere slavish copying of the Latin text is evidenced by the passage from Bede just cited.

The learned feminine *discipula* is found once, viz. in the passage Bede 236, 33 et seq.:

*in þæm (sc. mynstre) seo gemyngade cyninges dōhtor ærest  
wæs discipula & léornungmon regollices lifes, ond eft æfter  
ðon wæs mægister & lāreow ðæs mynstres.*

§ 53. 3. *folgere*, 'follower', disciple — in the latter sense found only a few times (cf. Bos. Toll.):

*se leofa Hælend . . . tæhte his folgerum.* Ass. (Æ) I, 86.  
Also: *ibid.* I, 113. V, 174. VI, 7.

Probably also Hom. I, 512, 17: *Godes folgeras, þæt synd  
ða cristenan.*

And in the poetry: *hē [= Crīst] folgeras XL sine rūnum  
ārette.* Glaubensbekenntnis 35.

Of others than the disciples of Christ:

*antecrist . . and his folgeras.* Hom. II, 540, 33.

*ānes dryes folgere*, „discipulus magi hominis“. Hom. I,  
468, 8.

Of John the Baptist:

*cōmon þā syððan his folgeras.* Ælfrie, Herrig Vol. 101,  
p. 321.

§ 54. 4. *gíngra*, disciple, servant; properly comparative of *geóng*, young. O.H.G. *jungiro*. Cf. the feminine *gíngre*, female servant.

Prose:

*[crīst] hine his gíngrum ætēowde.* Blick. 89, 36. 109, 7.  
Further: *Ibid.* 45. 131, 16, 31.

*se wéaldende Drihten sæde ðis bīgspell his gíngrum.* Hom. I  
328, 10. Similar: *Ibid.* I 294. 296. 298. 300. 324. 328. 462.  
490, 29. 512, 21, 24. II 242. 244, 10, 29. 246, 21, 32. 326.  
Ass. (Æ) II, 104.

*[Paulus] hæfde twēgen gíngran . . oðer hira wæs hāten  
Timotheus, oðer Titus.* Past. 291, 14. Similar: *ibid.* 181, 14.  
267, 8. Oros. 266, 8. Past. 357, 4. 451, 28. Boeth. Sedgef. 9, 5.  
Hom. I, 4. 364. II, 298. 412. 516. Lives 18, 276. Ben. R. 12, 6.

Poetry:

a) as servant: *drihtnes geónggran* (i. e. Adam and Eve).  
Gen. 450. Similar: Gen. 277. 291. 407. 458. 515. 546. Sat. 191.



b) as disciple: *gínggran sine* (i. e. of St. Andrew). An. 427. 849. 896. Similar: Gū. 1035. Disciple of Christ: Sat. 522. 526. 531. 572. An. 1332.

§ 55. 5. *Hieremon(n)*, disciple, from *monn*, man and *gehieran*, *gehýran*, to hear, to obey. Occurs but rarely of Christ's disciples:

*hē ('crīst') cūðe gemitgian his hieremonnum.* Past. 101, 15.

Disciples generally:

[Paulus] *spōn his hieremen: „discipulis“.* Past. 222, 8.

The word is employed elsewhere in Past. frequently, but in the sense of the Latin *subditus*, *subjectus*, in contradistinction to *praelatus*, a superior, instructor. Thus:

*ðæt hē (i. e. sē lāreow) gecyðe līfes weg his hieremonnum: „. . subditis“.* Ibid. 81, 2 etc. etc.

Finally we have the word in Eccl. Inst. in the special sense of „member of a parish“, „parishioner“:

*Ēac is gehwylcum mæssepreoste micel þearf þæt hē his hýremen géorne tyhte & lære . . .* Ibid. 25; further: Ibid. 26 (2 ×), etc.

Note. The form *hyrizon* occurs for *hyremon* in the following passages: Eccl. Inst. 26. 28. 36.

Before leaving *hieremon*, parishioner, the derivative *hýrnes*, parish, *parochia*, should be noted:

*ne spane nān mæssepreost nānne mon of ððre cyrcean hýrnysse tō his cyrcan.* Eccl. Inst. 14. Similar: Edgar II, 1.

§ 56. 6. *Læring-man*, corresponding exactly to the O. N. *læresveinn*, disciple; cf. *lār*, doctrine, *gelæran*, to instruct.

My sole example is from a late period of O. E., Ben. R. 20, 6 (*læringcman*).

§ 57. 7. *Léornere*, pupil, disciple; also frequently philosopher, stoic:

*Drihten gehet his léornerum.* Blick. 131, 20. Similar: 131, 22. 135, 3, 32.

*Sē Hælend ðā tōbræc ðā hlāfas and séalde his léornerum.* Hom. II, 400, 21.

*folgadun him léorneras his: „discipuli ejus“.* Mt. Rush. 8, 23. Similar: 8, 21. 9; 10, 11 Etc.

§ 58. 8. *Léorningcniht.*

a) Disciple in general:

*léorningcnihtas.* Past. 24, 8.

*fram léorningcnihtum ðæs eadigan pāpan Sce. Gregories: „a discipulis beati papae Gregorii“.* Bede 2, 22. Further: *ibid.* 4, 5. Hom. I, 480, 5. 486. II, 490 etc. Defens. 204, 12, 13. 205, 8, 19. Ben. R. 20, 25. Mk. 2, 18.

b) Disciple of Christ:

*hē gecēas twā and hūndseofonti . . . him tō léorningcnihtum* Ælfrie Grein 13, 30 etc. etc. in Ælfrie.

*Crist ðæt gebedd his léorningcnihtum tæhte.* Wulf. 20, 16. Similar: *Ibid.* 17. 10. 21. 290. Mt. 5, 1 etc. Mk. 2; 15, 16 etc. Defens. 14. 62. Cn. I, 22.

Note. The form *léorningcniht* occurs Defens. 206. 4.

§ 59. 9. *Léorningman(n)*, pupil, disciple.

a) In general:

*mæsseprēostas sceolon symble æt heora hūsum léorningmonna sceole habban.* Eccl. Inst. 20.

*Ic wylle . . . biddan ðæt ic mōte his léorningman beon* (disciple of St. James). Hom. II, 414.

*mīne ððre léorningmen: „ . . . discipuli (sc. magi)“.* Hom. II, 414. Similar: Ben. R. 20, 6 (Ms. T.).

b) Of Christ:

*ðæs Hælandes léorningmen.* Hom. II, 438.

*pæra fif bōcu andgīt geopenode . . . . . Crist his léorningmannum.* Hom. II, 396.

Note. For *léorningmon* as novice vid. § 202.

§ 60. 10. *Underþeodd(a)*, properly participle used as noun from the verb *underþeoddan* (part. pass. in Ælfred both *underþeodda* and *underþiedda*) *subjugare*, to subjugate, therefore an inferior, a subject. This is the sense in which it very frequently occurs in Past.:

*on ððre wisan ðā underþieddan, on ððre ðā ofer ððre zesettan: „aliter subditi aliter praelati“.* Past. 175, 15 etc. etc.

In the sense of 'disciples':

*Be ðisum manode sē apostol Paulus his nderþeoddan* (exhorted his disciples). Hom. I, 512, 26 and in the same sense *ibid.* I, 320. 544. 604.

*on his nderþeoddera mōdum: „in discipulorum mentibus“.* Ben. R. 10, 18. Similarly: *ibid.* 10, 21. 11, 12. 13, 6. 139, 12.

I have no passage to show that this expression was used of the disciples of Christ.

§ 61. 11. *þegn* (*þen*). O. E. *ðegn*, O. H. G. *degan*, signified in the original Germanic the 'retainer', 'servant'. In O. E. the meaning '*minister regis*', '*cyninges ðegn*' or simply '*ðegn*' (a member of the newly arisen nobility, not properly speaking of the ancient nobility of blood), was secondarily developed. The word originally belongs to the same root as Grk. *τέκ-νον* and *τίκ-τω*, and denotes accordingly 'child' ('that which is begotten') or 'boy', whence the notion 'servant' was easily deduced.

Another term for disciple, viz. '*cniht*', which is presumably connected with Grk. *γίγνω*, beget, *γίνομαι*, be born, and signifies primarily 'boy', 'youth', then 'servant' in general, experienced in part precisely the same evolution: the meaning became specialized and narrowed, *cniht* being used from the O. E. period on to denote also what is expressed by its Mod. Eng. representative '*knight*'. Cf. on this point Kluge's 'Wörterbuch' under '*Degen*' and '*Knecht*'.

In the usage *ðegn* = *discipulus Christi* the Anglo-Saxon appears to have felt not only the usual meaning of 'servant', '*minister*', but also the higher sense of 'noble retainer' (*minister regis*). The latter conception occurs of course only in poetry or poetical prose where Christ is conceived as a king or powerful prince. In the case of '*cniht*', disciple, on the contrary, we have only the notion 'servant' (vid. the examples).

The following passages will serve to illustrate what has just been said about the A.-S. conception of the *ðegn* as a disciple of Christ: .

*Philippus and Iacob, . . . mōdige mago-þegnas*, courageous retainers, warriors. Men. 81 (*mago-u*, child, son, servant, warrior).

(*Drihten*) *his magu-þegne* . . . (sc. *Matheus*) *hælo & frōfre* . . . *ābēad*. An. 94. Similarly (referring to Andreas), An. 1207. *mærne magu-þegn*, 'illustrious retainer' i. e. Andreas. An. 366.

Compare further: *wúldres þegn*, . . . . *þeodnes dýrting*, *Johannes*: 'Glorious thane, the Prince's darling, John'. Men. 115. Ibid. 130 Peter and Paul are termed '*éaldor-þegnas*' i. e. 'Chief thanes, retainers'.

In very much the same way, it is said of the Apostles Hom. II, 520: *on ðām wæron gecorene twelf hēah-ðegenas Petrus and Paulus, Andreas and Iacobus* etc. Compare with these:

*Ic eom Higelāces mæg and mago-þegn* (i. e. *Wiglāf*). Beo. 408.

*mago-þegn mōdig* Beo. 2758.

*mago-þegna þone sēlestan*, 'best of knights' (Heyne). Beo. 1406.

*mærum magu-þegne* (of a vassal of Hrothgar). Beo. 2079.

*Hīe wórdum ðæt ðām ýldestan éaldor-þegnum cýðan eodon* (i. e. the ministers of Holofernes) Jud. 242.

For *ðegn* alone as 'knight', 'royal retainer', compare Beo. 194 (*Bēowulf*), 2722 (*Wiglāf*) etc.

On the position of the thane (*ðegn*) in the Anglo-Saxon state vid. the exhaustive article in the 'Glossar' appended to Schmid's '*Gesetze der Angelsachsen*', 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed., and cf. Grd. II <sup>11</sup> S. 115. Grd. <sup>2</sup> III, 131—133.

The ordinary or prosaic use of '*ðegn*' as an ecclesiastical term is illustrated in the following quotations:

*Hælend zenam his twelf ðegnas*. Blick. 15, 5. Similarly: Ibid. 15; 11, 31. 135. 145. 159. 175. 177. 205. Ælf. Hom. II, 242. 244, 10. 262. Lives 23 B 631.

*Crīstes þegna sum*. Wulf. 257, 9. Sim.: Ibid. 17. 23. 88. 98, 15, 19. 99. 100, 21, 25. 257. Lind. Mt. p. 15; 17. 17; 2, 4, 11. Etc. (vid. Cook for rest).

*beforan his* (= *Drihtnes*) *ðegnum*: „*coram discipulis*". Past. 237, 12. Furthermore: De falsis diis: Kluge's Lesebuch XI 3, 119 et seq. Ælfrie Can. 35 (end). Ass. (Æ) II, 62. Ass. XIII, 9, 102, 111, 127, 161, 204. Blooms 352, 12. 352, 4. Boet. Sedgef. 8, 22.

Note. Rush. Mk. Lk. and Joh. employ for '*discipulus*' only *ðegn*; Rush. Mt. 5, 1 has „*his discipuli vel his þegnas*“, otherwise Rush. Mt. uses '*léornere*'.

§ 62. **Special Northumbrian Terminology.** We find in the Northumbrian gospels, in addition to *þegn* and *discipul* already mentioned, also the following renderings of Lat. *discipulus* which do not occur elsewhere in O. E.:

1. *ámbeht*, properly 'servant'. This is an ancient Common-Germanic borrowed word from the Latin *ambactus*, itself an old Gallo-Celtic word meaning literally a 'messenger', 'one sent around' (*amb-*, around). Compare O. H. G. *ambaht*, Goth. *andbahts* and vid. Kluge, Wörterbuch and Pogatscher § 187.

2. *émbehtmonn*, from *monn*, 'man', and *ómbeht*, *ámbeht*, *émbeht*. Vid. above.

3. *lārcneht*, '*discipulus*', from *lār*, 'doctrine', 'teaching' and *cneht*, *cniht* (q. v.).

4. *fōstring*, pupil, disciple, from *fōstur*, nourishment.

All examples will be found cited by Cook.

§ 63. Note. Very rarely O. E. *apostol* is found in the sense of Lat. *discipulus* — a confusion that was probably more in vogue among the common people:

*Loquebatur Iesus cum discipulis suis in parabolis: „Drihten wæs sprecende . . . to his apostolum mid biȝspellum“.* Hom. I, 520.

### The Apostles as Evangelists.

§ 64. An evangelist was called in O. E. *godspellere* i. e. proclaimer of the Gospel (*godspel*).

The origin of '*godspel*' has been much disputed, but at present the prevailing view is that the original form was *\*gōdspell*, i. e. 'good message' (*εὐ-αγγέλιον*). The former theory according to which *godspell* signifies 'divine message', or 'story about God' seems now to be mostly abandoned.

The word is undoubtedly very old, being found in every Germanic dialect excepting the Gothic; however, the primary form *\*gōd-spel* (after '*evangelium*') seems at an early period to have been misunderstood by the West Germans who, by connecting the word with '*god*', God, brought about the modification '*godspel*'.

O. N. *guðspiall* is not original but patterned after the O. E. form.

Note. The derivatives *godspellian*, *godspelbōc*, *godspeltic* and *godspellisc* will be treated in Part II.

### Examples.

*Iohannes ðæs godspelleres.* Past. 85, 21.

*Iohannes sē ȝodspellere.* Hom. I, 58.

[*Isaias*] *witeȝode be Crīste swiðe ȝewislice swilce hē godspellere wære.* Ælfr. Test. 9, 8.

Rarely 'evangelista' — probably only a learned form — is found:

*æt Stefanæs tide and Sce. Iohannes Evangelista.* Cockayne II, p. 294.

## 5. Martyrs and Confessors.

§ 65. Anglo-Saxon literature contains three expressions corresponding to Lat. 'martyr', to wit 1) *martyr* (less frequently *martyre*), 2) *cȳðere*, i. e. proclaimer, confessor, and 3) *brōwere*, sufferer.

Of these the most frequently employed is the borrowed term *martyr(e)*; *cȳðere* in the sense of martyr occurs only in the writings of Ælfric; *brōwere* I have encountered (save once in Chron. C) only in North. and in poetry, though the abstract *brōwung*, 'passio', is quite frequent in prose.

§ 66. 1. *martyr* (*martir*, *martyre*), st. m.

Note. On the forms:

The forms in *i* are chiefly late (E. g. Hom. II, 520. 538. 540, 20, 24, 28, 35 etc. Ælfric's Past. 13 etc. Ass. (Æ) VI, 118. IX, 144), for the older period rather rare: Oros. 290, 15 (C). Blick. 167, 24 and a few more places. But even in late O. E. 'martyr' on the whole preponderates. E. g. Hom. I, 48, 35. 52, 2, 16. 84. 88. 146. 524. 556. II, 82. 386. 544, 19. Ass. (Æ) III, 294. 380. Bl. 25. Wulf. 136. 152. 232 etc.

### Examples.

*sē hālga martyr.* Ælfric Lives XIV, 125 etc. etc.

[*hē*] *wearð crīstes martyre.* Oros. 290, 15.

*sleȝe hālīgra martyra:* „*caedibus martyrum*“. Bede 34, 6.  
*ðær martīras meotode cwēmað.* Sat. 655.

*sē martyre.* Gū. 485.

*in circan þære hālgan fæmnan and martires Sce Cecilian; „in ecclesia sanctae martyris Ceciliae“.* Bede 422, 1—2.

N. B. Note in the last example cited that the O. E., following the Latin, employs the same form for both genders.

§ 67. 2. *cýðere*, st. m., from *cýðan* (root shown in Goth. *kunþs*, Ger. *kund*), ‘bear witness’, ‘proclaim’. The fundamental meaning is therefore ‘a witness’, as in the prototype Grk. Lat. *martyr*.

Thus we read Mk. 14, 63: *Hwī gewilnige wē gýt cýðera: „quid adhuc desideramus testes?“* Etc.

### Examples.

Ælfrie employs both *martyr* and *cýðere* without any apparent distinction:

*sē forma cýðere Stephanus (‘protomartyr’) . . . Stephanum . . . ðone ðe hē ær ehtende martyr gemacode.* Hom. II, 82, 20 and 24.

As our word does not appear in the sense of martyr elsewhere in O. E., I have given in the following a list of all the passages:

*Dionisius, Godes cýðere.* Hom. I, 558, 31.

*his hālgan cýðeres: „martyris sui“.* Ibid. 564, 17.

*ðæs hālgan cýðeres lic: „corpus sancti Clementis“.* Ibid. 564, 20.

*ðurh ðone . . . cýðere Stephanum: „per hunc martyrem“.* Hom. II, 28, 11. Similarly: Lives 2, 378. Hom. I, 46. 48, 10, 32. 50. 52, 23, 25. 384. 402. 422, 30, 32. 424, 7. 426, 29. 430. 434. 450. 542. 558. 564, 17, 20, 27, 32. II, 24, 5, 9, 21, 30. 26. 28 (4×). 32, 27. 34, 8, 13, 23. 82. 506. 508.

§ 68. 3. *þrōwere*, Endurer, Sufferer; O. E. *þrōwian*, suffer, endure:

*sē Ciricius tīd ðæs ðrōweres.* Chron. C. 916.

*ȝodes þrōwera* (gen. plur.) Gū. 153. Very similar: Gū. 132.

The remaining passages are from the North. and are contained in D. Rit.:

*martyrum: ðrōwerana.* 44, 17.

*Stephanus protomartyr: stephne’ ðe fruma ðrōwere.* 197, 5.

*martyres: ðrōweras.* 48, 5. Also: 49, 11 etc.

The feminine is found D. Rit. 77, 14: *Sanctae Ceciliae martyris tuae: ðrōwræ ðinræ.* Similarly: Ibid. 80, 13.

### Confessors.

§ 69. Lat. *confessor* is rendered in O. E. by *óndettere*, *ándettere*, from *ándettan*, *confiteri* and *ándet*, *óndet*, *confessio*, the original form of which *\*and-hāt* became corrupted at an early date. Compare O. H. G. *antheizan*, Goth. *andhaitan*, to vow, acknowledge. On the form *ándet*, as well as the parallel cases *ōret* (from *\*or-hāt*), *bēot*, and others, cf. Sievers Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 43, Note 4.

### Passages.

*ȝodes ándettere* (i. e. St. Alban, Martyr and Confessor). Bede 36, 31. 40, 13.

*Confessores, ðæt sind ándeteras.* Hom. II, 558, 22.

*be apostolum and martirum, ándeterum and hālgum fāmnum.* Ibid. 520. Very similar: 386. Further: Ibid. I, 476. II, 498. 558, 23, 29, 32. Ælfric's Past. 19.

*Eusebii confessoris: óndetteres.* D. Rit. 65, 4.

*Marco confessore: marc' óndetere.* Ibid. 72, 5 etc.

§ 70. A few passages in late texts show instead of *ándettere* the Latin word. The sing. seems to have been declined like a native noun of the strong declension, the plur. retaining the Latin case-endings:

*tō mæniges confessores mæssedæge.* Lk. 12, 35 (edge).

*ānes confessores mæssedæg.* Mt. 10, 26 (edge). 24, 42 (edge).

*ðā æðelan confessores.* Ass. (Æ) IV, 146.

*ðā clānan confessores.* Ibid. VI, 119.

*ðurh apostolas and martyres and confessores.* Wulf. 232. Further: Ass. (Æ) IV, 27. Ælfric's Past. 19. 31. 40.

§ 71. *Martyrdom*, the witness or death of a martyr, 'martyrium', is expressed in O. E. by

*martyrdōm* (O. H. G. *martartuom*, -toam):

*His . . . martyrdōme wýrðe: „ejus martyrio condigna“.* Bede 40, 26.



*Hē is fyrmest on martyrdōme.* Ælf. Hom. II, 34, 22.  
*brōwedon . . . mærne martyrdōm.* Men. 126. And in  
 poetry elsewhere: Ibid. 145. Gebete IV, 80.

Etc. Etc.

*Martyrhād, 'martyrium' (rare):*

*Ne hiora martirhāda won wëron heofonlīco wúndor.* Bede  
 416, 30.

*Duodecima (Sc. remissio peccatorum) est martyrium: „sēo  
 twelfte is martyrhād“.* Con. Ecgb. 2 (end), and likewise  
 ('martirhād') Poen. Ecgb. IV, 63.

*He martyrhād mōde zelufade.* Gū. 443.

*Martyrung* st. f., passion, 'passio', O. H. G. *martyrunga* —  
 (rare):

*Ymbe Crīstes tǣcninga and ymbe his martyrunga: „de  
 passione Christi“.* Oros. 254, 24.

§ 72. The O. E. uses, however, by far the most  
 frequently the term

*brōwung* (-ing) st. f., properly 'passio', 'suffering' (of a  
 martyr, and in general), 'woe', any 'passion' (cf. *tumultus et  
 conluctatio passionum: gewinn brōwunga*. Defen. 82, 3; and  
 similarly *ibid.* 204). Thus the O. E. word coincides in meaning  
 pretty thoroughly with the Lat. 'passio', from which it derives  
 its ecclesiastical sense of 'martyrdom', 'passion of Christ'.

Note. Notwithstanding this ample use of *brōwung*, however, the  
 Latin term was also employed in the special sense of 'biblical description  
 of Our Lord's passion', designating those portions of the Gospels which  
 describe the passion of Christ. All the passages will be found in the  
 West Saxon version, written on the margin. 'Passio' is used as a strong  
 masculine noun:

*Des passio gebyrað on tīwes dæg on ðære palmwucan.* Mk. 14, 1.  
 Very similarly: Lk. 22, 1. *Des passio gebyreð on lānga friga-dæg.* Jo. 18, 1.

### Passages.

*ðā brōwunge þāra hāligra martyra.* Bede 40, 19.  
*his ðrōwunge and martyrdōme wýrðe.* Ibid. 40, 26. Etc., etc.  
*þæs hālgan godspelleres brōwunge: „passionem sanctam“.*  
 Hom. II, 476, 15. Similarly: Ibid. II, 480. I, 418 etc. Wulf.  
 270, 1 etc.

*æfter Crīstes þrōwunge.* Hom. II, 294, 14. 298. 420. I, 438 etc.  
Wulf. 269 etc. Ælfred Einl. 49, § 1. Bl. 171 etc.

*dryhtnes þrōwunga* (acc. plur.). Cri. 1180.

*ðæt hālige trīow ðīnre ðrōwunga.* Hymnus 28.

*him God wólde æfter þrōwunga þone gegýldan ðæt hē  
martyrhād mōde gelufade.* Gū. 442.

Etc. Etc.

§ 73. 'To die a martyr's death', 'suffer martyrdom' is  
*þrōwian*, Lat. *'pati'*:

*On ðā tīd on Breotone wæs þrōwiende Scs. Albanus.*  
Bede 34, 8.

*Wæron eac swylce þrōwiende on ðā tīd Aaron and Iulilius.*  
Ibid. 40, 30.

'To condemn to martyrdom', 'to martyr' is expressed by  
the following:

1. *marterian* (*martyrian*, *gemarterian*), Lat. *martyrizare*:  
*hæ Petrus and Paulus gemartredon.* Oros. 262, 4.

*Simon and Iudas samod wæron gemartyrode on Persida  
lānde for Crīstes gelēafan.* Ælfrie T. 15, 36.

*hē mōt . . . gewyrcean ðæt Enoh and Elias ðurh þone  
þeodfeond gemartirode wéorðað.* Wulf. 273, 25.

2. *Martyr gedōn*, 'make a martyr':

*Gōdenrīc Gotena cyning gedýde fela martyra on his þeode  
crīstenra monna.* Oros. 288, 19.

3. *Martyr gemacian* (same as *martyr gedōn*). Hom. II, 82, 24.

§ 74. A book in which the lives and acts of the martyrs  
are set forth — a *martyrology* — was termed in Anglo-Saxon  
usually *martyr-racu*, from *racu*, 'narrative'; less frequently  
*þrōwung-ræding*, 'passion-reading', seems to have been employed.

By the side of this native terminology, however, the Latin  
word, unchanged or, less frequently, inflected as a weak sub-  
stantive, is found.

Examples are rare.

*Hi wóldon ðisra hāligra martyra marty-race āwritan:*  
*'martyrium'.* Ælfrie Lives XXIII, 333. Similarly, *ibid.* 342. 773.

*Tunc residentibus cunctis legatur martyrologium: „si rædd þróuung-ræding“. De C. M. 385, 8.*

*ðis is Alwoldes bisceopes cwyde, ðæt is, ðæt hē geann . . . ordulfe twēgra bōca: hrabanus and martyrologium. Thorpe, Charters and Doc. X, 9 (Anno 1008—1012).*

*martyrologium be sýmbeldagum hāligra martyra on dære ealle ðā ðe ic gemetan mihte, nales ðæt an, hwilce dæge, ac eac swilce hwilce cyne compes oððe únder hwilcum dēman hīe middan gēard oferswiðden, ic géornlice āwrat. Bede 484, 19.*

*a puero resurrectio domini . . . legitur quanquam in martyrlogio id non habetur: „on martirlogian“. De C. M. 400, 2.*

§ 75. John the Baptist may be considered here.

The Lat. *Iohannes Baptista* is rendered in O. E. chiefly by *Iohannes sē fulluktere* (earlier *fulwihtere*), from *fulwiht* st. n., i. e. the ecclesiastical ‘*consignatio*’, or ‘full consecration’, as distinguished from the ‘*prima signatio*’ of the catechumens (expressed by *crīstnung*, *gecrīstnian* — cf. § 22); from \**wīhan*, Ger. *weihen*, ‘to consecrate’; Goth. *weihan*, O. H. G. *wīhan*.

The view expressed by some etymologists (Vid. Bos. Toll., and Skeat; the latter repeats the antiquated and erroneous view even in the latest edition of his dictionary — 1898),<sup>1)</sup> that *fullian*, ‘baptize’, and *fullian*, to ‘full’ or whiten clothes are identical, is undoubtedly erroneous. According to these etymologists both words are derived from the Lat. *fullare*, to whiten, to cleanse.

But the O. E. *fullian*, -ode, baptize, is only the later form of *fulwian* (< \**full-wīhan*), ‘to complete the consecration or sacrament of baptism’, and consequently has, etymologically, nothing in common with *fullian*, *fullare*.

By the side of *fulwihtere* appears, occasionally, *fulwihtwer*; this form is in all probability due to popular derivation from *fulwiht* and *wer*, ‘man’.

#### Examples.

*sēo foremære gebýrd Sancte Iohannes þæs fulwihtweres. Blick. 161, 4.*

<sup>1)</sup> [but not repeated in the edition of 1901.]

*Iohannes sē fulwihtere.* Ibid. 167, 19 etc. etc.

*Iohannem ðone fulluhtere.* Ben. R. 134, 14. Etc. etc.

§ 76. Sometimes the original Latin phrase is found either unaltered or declined as a weak masculine:

*fram Adame oð Iohannem Baptistam.* Hom. II, 70.

*Hēr Iohannes Baptista atȳwede twām munecon . . . his heafod.* Chr. F. 448.

*on Sce Iohannes Baptistān* (sc. *naman*). Blick. 205, 16.

With the wrong Lat. case-ending:

*(ðis folc secgð þæt þū eart) Iohannes Baptistam.* Lk. 9, 19  
(the Lat. text reads here '*Iohannes Baptistam*').

§ 77. Note. In the Northumbrian and Mercian dialects we have the anglicized forms: *bæstere*, *bæcere*, *bæchere*, *bæzere*, *bædzere*, *bezere* (-a) and *bædcere* — all more or less corrupted from the original form \**baptistere*.<sup>1)</sup>

*Bædcere*, the last mentioned, was still further corrupted by being popularly associated with the native *bæð*, *badian*.

The passages in which these forms occur are as follows: — *bæstere*: *Joannes Baptista, bæstere vel fulwihtere.* Lind. Mt. 3, 1.

*bæcere*: *Iohannis baptiste, ioh' bæcere.* D. Rit. 56, 8, 15, 17. 67, 21. 196, 5.

*bæchere*: *ioh' bæchere.* Ibid. 56, 6.

*bæzere*: *iohannes sē bæzere.* Rush. Mt. 14, 2. 11, 11, 12.

*bædzere*: *iohannes sē bædzere.* Rush. Mt. 16, 14. 17, 13.

*bezere* (-a): *iohannes sē bezere.* Rush. Mt. 14, 8. 3, 1.

*bædcere*: *Iohannis Baptistae, bædcere.* Lind. Mt. p. 14, 3.

Of the many epithets and designations of the Baptist in vogue in A. S. literature the following may serve as characteristic examples:

§ 78. *crīstes fulwihtfæder*, 'Christ's sponsor in baptism'. Blick. 205, 17.

The following passage from the Blickling Homilies is especially characteristic:

*Hē* [i. e. St. John] *wæs ȝelic ȝodes englūm & hē wæs bēme* ('a Trumpet'), *Crīstes fricca* ('Crier', 'Proclaimer') *on þysne middanzéard* and *wæs ȝodes suna spellboda* ('Messenger', 'Ambassador') and *Seȝnbora* ('Colorbearer') *ðæs ufancūndan*

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Bülbring, *Altenglisches Elementarbuch* I § 521.]

*kyninges and firena forgifnes and gerihtnes hǣðenra ðeoda . . . sē niwa eorendel ('Dawn') Sanctus Iohannes.* Ibid. 163, 20 ff.

As 'Godes, crīstes, éngel', i. e. in the literal sense of 'messenger', Lat. *angelus*:

*sē Hālga Jǣst . . . be Sce Iohanne cwæð: Ic sēnde minne éngel beforan þīnre onsýne . . . ðæt wæs þonne swiðe hēalīc nama ðæt Scs Iohannes 'éngel' wæs nemned.* Blick. 167, 27 ff.

*sēo gīfernes . . . ðæs Crīstes éngles.* Ibid. 163, 12.

Quite frequently he is dubbed, in imitation of the Latin precursor, *forerynel*, *forrynel* (once, *fore-iornere*), the Fore-runner, Precursor, of Christ. *Rynel*, runner, messenger, from 'rinnan', run; *iornere*, runner, from *iernan* (from *rinnan* by metathesis), run:

*hē (Iohannes) wæs his (Crīstes) forrynel æt ðām ærran tōcyme.* Hom. I, 356, 21.

*his ðæs mǣran Forryneles and Fulluhteres dīngunge.* I, 364.

*Iohannes wæs Crīstes forrynel on his ācennednysse and on his bodunge.* Ibid. 484, 34.

*his forerynel.* Ælf. Grein 12, 24.

*on ðære cyrcan ðæs eadigan fore-ryneles: „in oratorio sancti Iohannis“.* Lives 23 B, 626.

*Humilitas autem precursor est caritatis et sicut iohannes precursor fuit iesu: „eadmōdnyss sōðlice forrynel ys sōðre lufe and ealswā [Iohannes] forrynel wæs hǣlendes.* Defen. 23.

Similar to the foregoing is the designation *bydel*, herald, proclaimer, from the same root as the verbs *bodian* and *bēodan*; cf. O. H. G. *butil*, Ger. *Büttel*:

*[Iohannes] wæs Godes bydel and nā God.* Hom. I, 352.

*ðæs hǣlendes . . . and Iohannes his bydeles.* Ibid. 352, 34.

*Sē bydel gebigde . . . micelne heap Israhēla ðeode tō heora Scyppende mid his bodunge.* Ibid. 356, 15.

*ðæs bydeles ācennednys.* Ibid. 356, 23. Similar: Ibid. 358, 1. II, 36 (2×). Ælf. Grein 12.

The term *bydelas* is, further, applied to the Disciples in their capacity as preachers or proclaimers of the Word:

*ðā hālgan bydelas.* Hom. I, 584, 22.

*ðā bydelas gehǣldon ðurh godes mihte healte and blinde.* Ibid. 208, 32. Further: Ibid. I, 310. 390. II, 372. 430. 530. 534, 19. Ass. (Æ) IV, 142.

## 6. Saints.

§ 79. Corresponding to the Latin *sanctus* is O. E. *hālig*; O. H. G. *heilag*, O. S. *hēlag*, O. N. *heilagr* — all from the common Germanic *\*hail*, whole, sound in health. In O. E. both the strong and the weak forms are used to render Lat. *Sanctus*, the substantive.

Note. Just how the meaning of *hālig*, *sanctus*, was developed out of the root *\*hail*, whole, healthy, is not perfectly clear. Still it is likely that *hālig*, which in the pre-Christian period was probably in vogue among the Teutons in the original sense of uninjured in battle, saved, whole, arrived at the sense *sanctus* through the influence of *hāl*, salvation, *salus*, in the Christian sense — a meaning acquired presumably soon after the Conversion. The Saved are, in contrast to the Lost, the deceased members of the church, who are then also looked upon as 'sancti', saints.

In this way, or similarly, *hālig*, 'holy', was in all probability developed. Cf. for similar explanations Heyne's 'Wörterbuch' and the Grimm dictionary, sub 'heilig'. A somewhat different sense-development of *hālig* < *hāl* will be found in the Oxf. Diet., art. 'holy'.

The words *hæl* (O. N. *heill*), omen, Augury; *hāl-s-ere*, *hāl-s-ian* (O. H. G. *heilisari*, *heilisōn*), conjurer, to conjure, can be more easily explained. *hæl*, originally only 'healing', 'health', gradually extended its meaning so as to include the salvation-bringing, health-bringing, omen; in a similar manner *hālsian* was developed from 'save', 'heal', to 'heal by conjuring', and finally to 'conjure' generally.

## Examples.

*ealra hālgena hālga*: Hom. II, 14, 16.

*ȝodes hālgan sind énglas and menn*. Hom. I, 538, 23.

*On ðone dæg æfter ealra hālgena mæssedæg*: 'the day after All Saints'. Chr. (Laud) 1083.

*sēo hālge*. Jul. 315.

*sē hālga*. Men. 37. An. 346.

*hāliges*, 'of the saint'. An. 89, 893.

*hālige*, 'Saints'. Sal. 40.

*hālge* (nom. plur.). Jul. 15.

*hāligra*. Cri. 529.

*ðāra hāligra*. Ps. 51, 8.

In a single passage in the Past. Care *hālige* translates the Lat. *electi*, 'the Elect':

*sēo scýld hine swiðe feorr of ealra hāligra rīme ātuge*: „ab electorum numero“. 37, 9.

This use of *hālig* occurs also in Old Norse (*heilagr*). Cf. Kahle, *Acta Germ.* p. 25.

§ 80. Note. The noun *hælnes* [a) salvation, b) sanctuary] is found but rarely: *nū sint hælnesse dagas*, 'Now is the day of salvation'. Past. 246, 14.

*on circan and on hælnessan*, 'in churches and sanctuaries'. Appen. IV, 25; with which compare Appen. IV, 19:

*hælnes-grið and hād-grið hēalde man*, 'keep the peace of consecrated places and orders'.

§ 81. In addition to the native term, we occasionally meet in O. E. the borrowed word *sē sanct* < Lat. *sanctus*, 'saint'.

In the forms *Sancte* m. & f., *Sanctus*, and *Sancta* f. (vid. sub. 'Virgin Mary'), *sanct* is used as a title and is extremely frequent, being usually abbreviated into *Sce*, *Sēs*, *Sēa*, and but rarely inflected. The following are examples of the inflected forms:

*habbe hē Godes curs . . and Sēs [Sanctes] Petres*. Earle, Land. Ch. p. 259.

*hē geseah Sēm [= Sanctum] Albanum*. Bede 34, 31.

*in āre Sēi Martini*. Ibid. 62, 2.

*on Scae [Sanctae] Marian noman*. Bl. 205, 15.

The nominative in *-us*:

*Sēs [= Sanctus] Pauwlus*. Bl. 43 etc., and passim everywhere.

Uninflected forms:

*Intō sanct paule*. Earle, Land. Ch. p. 215 (anno 997); and very similar *ibid.* (2 ×).

*wið sancte peter*. Earle, Land. Ch. p. 227., etc. everywhere.

*in Sēe [= Sancte] Petres mynstre*. Bede 116, 16 etc. everywhere.

*Sanct* as the independent substantive, 'Saint': *tō hām æðelan* [sc. *éngla órðfruma*] *hnigan him sanctas*. Sat. 240.

*Sanctas síngað*. Ibid. 355.

*ealra sancta sýmbel*. Men. 200.

*basilius . . . eode . . tō ðān Sce [= Sancte] he on ðære cyrcean læg*. Lives 3, 255.

*be þæs sces [= sanctes] wæpnum.* Ibid. 258. Similar, ibid. 264.

*Hwæt, ðā Turonisce . . þone sanct ferodon tō þære ylcan byrig.* Hom. II, 518, 27.

Returning to *hālig*, we have now to note the following derivatives:

§ 82. 1. *hālgung*, 'consecratio', consecration, ordination.

a) Ordination: *sēo hālgung . . . bisceopes.* Chr. A, 984.

Etc. Etc.

b) Consecration of a church, etc.:

*ðā gesomnade sē cyng (Salomo) ealle his witan tō ðære hālgunge* (i. e. of the Temple). Wulf. 278, 3.

etc.

Quite frequently is found, in stead of the simple word, the compound *cyric-hālgung*, which not only designates the consecration of a church, but is used quite generally:

*tō Salomones cyrichālgunge.* Wulf. 281, 7.

*æt þære éaldan cyrichālgunge* (i. e. of the Temple in Jerusalem). Ibid. 280, 21.

Etc.

§ 83. The verb corresponding to *hālig* and *hālgung* is (*ge*)*hālgian*, to consecrate; Ger. *heiligen*:

a) to ordain a priest, consecrate a king, etc.:

*tō bisceope gehālgod.* Chron. C, 980.

*hē hine tō cyninge gehālgode.* Chron. A, 853.

Etc. Etc.

b) to consecrate a building:

*þonne wē cyrican hālgiað.* Wulf. 278, 18. Similar: Ibid. 279, 21.

*tō hālgianne ðæt mynster æt Eofes hāmme.* Chron. D, 1054.

Etc.

§ 84. 2. *hālignes* (-*nys*, -*nis*), str. f.

a) State of being holy, Lat. *Sanctitas*:

*for heora hālignesse.* Blick. 155, 31.

*on hālignesse.* Lk. 1, 75.

Etc. Etc.



b) Later, from the abstract meaning 'sanctitas', was developed the concrete 'sanctuarium', holy place, sanctuary; cf. the same change in the Latin *sanctimonium*, 'holiness', in Middle Latin (even in Augustine) also 'the sanctuary'; see Du Cange under 'sanctimonium'.

The passages in which the O. E. word occurs are rather rare, although the first dates as far back as the 9<sup>th</sup> Century (about A. D. 850 — cf. O. E. T, p. 184):

*sanctimonium tuum Domine quod preparaverunt, hālighnisse ðīne.* Vesp. Hymns 5; 32. O. E. T.

*si quis ecclesiam dei denudaverit vel sanctimonia violaverit, anathema sit:* „sē ðe . . . hālighnessa grið brece . . .“ Wulf. 68.

*hālighnessa sýndon tō griðlēase wīde and godes hūs sýndon tō clāne berýpte,* „the sanctuaries are without peace, and God's houses are plundered“ (Wulfstan bemoans the miseries of his native land). Wulf. 158.

We may note here, further, that *hālighnes* also designates the Tabernacle and the Temple in the Old Testament; this use of the word occurs in Past., the plural being used:

*inngóngende & utgóngende beforan Gode tō ðām hālighnessum:* „ingreditur et egreditur sanctuarium in conspectu Domini“. Past. 93, 7.

Also the Holy of Holies, *sanctuarium*, *sancta sanctorum*, is expressed by *hālighnes* (sing. or plur.):

„ðære hālegestan hālighnesse gimmas: *sanctuarii lapides*“. Past. 135, 12.

*betwux ðām hālegestan hālighnessum:* „*intra sancta sanctorum*“. Past. 135, 9.

Both expressions seem to be partial simulations of the Lat. *sancta sanctorum*.

In a purely figurative sense, our word is employed in the following passage: *ða ðonne berað godes fatu, ðā ðe oðerra monna sāula underfōoð tō læðanne . . . tō ðēm innermestan hālighnessum:* „*... animas aeterna sacra perducendas suscipiunt*“. Past. 77, 3 et seq.

c) In the same way as the sense just discussed under b), arose the meaning *hālighnes* = sacred relic.

The three instances of this sense known to me are all late, and are found in the Legend of St. Veronica (Ass. XVI):

*āgif mē ðā hālignyssse ðe ðū myd þe hæfst* (i. e. 'ðæt reaf ðæt sē sylfa hāelend werede', vid. l. 248), 237.

*sēo hālignis hym wæs tō broht.* 245.

*Veronica . . . sæde ðæt heo nāne hālignyssa myd hyre næfde.* „ . . had no relics.“ 239.

Note. The earliest example of *hālignes* in this sense is, according to the Oxf. Dict., to be found in M. E. anno 1175.

The above citations prove that the word was used thus fully 100 years earlier.

§ 85. 3. *hāligdōm* str. m., a) State of being holy (for force of suffix *-dōm*, cf. *hæðendōm*, § 16). This, the fundamental meaning of the word, seems to have been at an early date supplied by *hālignes*; for we find but few instances in O. E. where *hāligdōm* = 'sanctimonia', holiness. Still, it must have always retained in this sense a limited vogue, for as late a work as the *Orrmulum*, in M. E. times, is acquainted with it; cf. Mätzner's 'Wörterbuch' to his 'Altenglische Sprachproben' (only one passage).

#### Examples.

*Hwæt tæcnað ðonne ðæt góld . . . būton ðā hēanesse ðæs hāligdōmes?* „*excellentia Sanctitatis*“. Past. 133, 14.

*ðæt is licettung hāligdōmes*, a simulating of holiness. Past. 439, 23. Similar: Ibid. 439, 34.

*hāligdōm, sanctimonia.* D. Rit. 100, 6.

*mycel is sē hāligdōm and sēo wéorðung sce Iohannes.* Blick. 167, 16.

To this abstract meaning of *hāligdōm* was soon added, as in so many cases, one or more concrete meanings: first of all, any holy thing or consecrated object; and then in particular churchbuildings and the relics of saints. This brings us to —

§ 86. b) *hāligdōm* = 'sacramentum', Holy Communion (rare):

*sacramentum perceperunt*, „*hāligdōm . . onfængon*“. D. Rit. 30, 9.

*cenae eius mysticae panditur sacramentum*: „ . . *hāligdōm*“. Lind. Mk. p. 5, 11.

*divini sacramenti archana*: „godcúndes hāligdōmes dīglū“. Defens. 54, 2.

*per fidem sacramenti*: „þurh gelēafan hāligdōmes“. Ibid. 136, 9. very similar: ibid. 137, 4, 6.

§ 87. c) *hāligdōm* = ‘Sanctuarium’, sacred building, Sanctuary; extensively used, although by no means so popular as *hāligdōm d*):

*bringe his hlāford hine tō þæs hāligdōmes dura*: „applicabitur ad ostium et postes (sc. *tabernaculi*)“. Exod. Gr. W. 21, 5.

*þā burh Hierusalem ðær bið heora hāligdōm*, the Jewish Sanctuary i. e. the Temple. Ass. (Æ) IX, 136. For other examples vid. Bosworth-Toller.

§ 88. d) *hāligdōm*, — 1. consecrated object, ‘sanctum’: *beforan ðære earce ðe sē hāligdōm on wæs ðæs temples*: „*coram testamenti arca*“. Past. 103, 5.

2. ‘Sanctuarium’, ‘reliquiae’, relics.

This sense of *hāligdōm* is the most frequent of all; the word in this sense occurs almost exclusively in the singular and very often collectively — for instance of the plural, see below:

*on þone Drihten þe ðæs hāligdōm is fore hālig*: „*in illo Deo pro quo sanctum hoc sanctificatum est*“. Appen. X, 1—2.

As a collective noun:

*hāligdōm and hālige bēc hāndlīgan*: „*reliquias et sacros libros manu tractare*“. Poen. Eegb. III, 4.

*gā man mid hāligdōme ūt and mid hāligwætere*. Wulf. 173, 13; Similar ibid. 181, 3.

*begān ūre gebedu, and fylīgan ūrum hāligdōme ūt and inn*. Hom. I, 246.

Etc. etc.

The plural occurs: *sanctorum quorum reliquie*: „*hālgena þære lāfe, þe sind hālidōmas*“ (literal translation of the Latin, affixed as explanation to a gloss). Ben. R. Log. 97, 14.

§ 89. e) In a single passage *hāligdōm* appears as the translation of Lat. ‘*ministerium sacrum*’, ‘holy office’, ‘holy work’:

*ne aut non purgatus adire quisque sacra ministeria audeat:*  
 „ðylæs ænig unclænsod dorste on swā micelne hāligdōm fōn  
 ðære clænan þegnenga ðæs sacerdhādes“. Past. 51, 1.

I shall mention here likewise a few more terms relating to relics.

§ 90. Besides *hāligdōm*, we have the very extensively used learned expression ‘*reliquias*’, more rarely, *reliquie* (i. e. *reliquiae*), as designation of relics:

*his* (i. e. *see Bartholomei*) *hālgan reliquias*. Hom. I, 470. Similar *ibid.* 474.

*Gregorius āsēnde ēac Augustine . . . ðæra apostola and martyra reliquias*. Hom. II, 132.

*ðā sette hē ðā reliquias on heora cyste*. Bede 382, 30; etc.

*ðyssa reliquia dæl*. *Ibid.* 382, 18; Similar 382, 21.

*þā zenāmon hī sumne dæl his feaxes him tō reliquium*. 382, 16.

Etc., etc.

*reliquie*:

*Sīngende ænne antiphonam tō ðæs hālgan reliquie*. Breck C. M. 115.

*hyra reliquie, þæt is hyra bān*. Ben. R. 101, 3.

Etc., etc.

§ 91. The bones of the Saints were preserved in the churches in a „*shrine*“; this latter was called in O. E. *scrin* str. n., properly box, or chest in general — O. H. G. *scrini*, Icel. *skrín* — all from Lat. *scrinium*, a box or chest:<sup>1)</sup>

*þā wólde sē cāsere wyrcan him eallum gýldene scrýn* (for the Seven Sleepers): „*mandans fieri loculos aureos in quibus reconderebantur*“. Hom. II, 426.

For other passages see Bos. Toll.

<sup>1)</sup> The word was borrowed by our Teutonic forefathers in pre-Christian times as a commercial term. Cf. Seiler p. 29; cf. also Kluge in his „*Wörterbuch*“. In Christian times the word received a strong religious coloring, just as did the Latin word itself; cf. Du Cange.

## Chapter 3.

### The Ecclesiastical Offices.

General division.

§ 92. Christianity conceives society as divided into two classes: laymen and the clergy. The latter is to be separated, furthermore, into two originally clearly defined and distinct groups, namely, the clergy proper, and the monastic clergy, which latter were at first not reckoned as clergymen at all (vid. „Monastie Clergy“ § 182).

Laymen, the laity, Lat. *laici* (< Gr. *λαϊκός*, ‘belonging to the people’) are termed in O. E. principally ‘*læwede men*’, ‘*ðæt læwede folc*’ (cf. ‘*ðæt gāstlic folc, clericatus*’, below), from *læwed*, ‘*laicus*’.

The origin and history of this word is not clear; formally, it coincides exactly with O. E. *læwan*, Goth. *lêwjan*, ‘betray’; and ‘*læwed man*’ would, consequently, mean ‘the betrayed’!

According to others (vid. Skeat, ‘Etymological Dictionary’, art. ‘lewd’), *læwan* sometimes has the sense of ‘weaken’ e. g. Ælfric’s Exod. XXII, 10 & 14: ‘*gelewed, debilitatum*’. Starting from this as the fundamental meaning we would then have the following development: 1. weakened, 2. politically weak, i. e. 3. the people. Then, after the introduction of Christianity, 4. weak in culture, lacking culture, uneducated, i. e. 5. the common people, as distinguished from the learned class, the clergy (cf. ‘*ðā læwedan & ðā gelæredan*’. Scredunga 29, 5). For *gelewed*, *ālæwed* „*debilis*“ and similar forms see Pogatscher, Anz. f. d. Altertum 1890 p. 12.

More plausible than either of the foregoing hypotheses is, it seems to me, the attempt of Pogatscher (Pog. § 340 et seq.), who derives *læwed* from the Latin.

He supposes the following grades of development: Middle Lat. *\*laicatus* (like '*clericatus*', clergyman) > Gallo-Rom. *\*lāgād-* > *\*lāzād* > *\*lāzwād* > *\*lāwæd* (*g* disappears, as in O. E. *lēowe* < Gallo-Rom. *leuga*). This latter form was then regarded by the Anglo-Saxons as a participle, after the analogy of *zehādod* (clergyman), and at the same time assigned (formally) to the native *læwan*. (?)

See also Kluge-Lutz Et. Diet., where *læwed* „unlearned“ is derived from lat. *laicus*.

In contrast to the O. E., the O. H. G. and O. N. possess corresponding expressions derived clearly from the Lat.: O. H. G. *leigo*, plur. *leigun*, '*laici*', and *laihmann*, '*laicus*'; O. N. *laikmenn*, '*laici*'.

#### Examples.

*Prēostas sīndon zesette tō lāreowum þām lāwedum folce.* Ælfrie, T. 22, 37.

*ægðer ge zehādodum mannum ge lāwedum.* Wulf. 234, 7.

*ȝyf hwā nunnan mid hāmedþinge . . . ȝefō, sȝ hit twi-bōte, swā wē ær be lāwedum men fūndon.* Ælfred 18 B.

By the side of *læwede* is also found *læde* Bede 400, 2 (cf. Pogatscher Anz. l. c.).

§ 93. In a few instances we find the layman designated as *céorl* i. e. 'a man of the people'. Cf. Germ. '*Kerl*'.

*laicus, céorl.* Ælfrie's Colloq. Wr. W. 100, 13.

Cf. *vulgus, céorlfolc.* Wr. W. 309, 39.

The laity collectively were sometimes termed (*ðæt*) *céorlisc folc*, „the common people“, — *céorlisc* = *vulgaris, rusticus* (vid. Bos. Toll.):

*wē witon tō-sōðe þæt manega sȝðefulle clēricas nyton hwæt byð quadrans . . . sē féorða[n] dæl byð [byð, MS.] quadrans ȝeçiged, bēo hyt peniȝ oððe pūnd, swā þæt wēl wāt céorlisc folc.* B.'s Håndbōc, Angl. VIII, 306, 26 et sq.

Note. The '*céorl*' in the Anglo-Saxon state denoted properly a member of the third, or lowest, class of freemen, a person without any distinction of rank. Thus, when transferred to the ecclesiastical relation, the '*céorl*' would designate a member of the laity as distinguished from the clergy. For the later history of the word in English vid. the Oxford Dict. art. *churl*; for etymology, Kluge.

### The Clergy.

§ 94. In order to designate the Christian priestly class the Romans adopted the Greek word *κληρικός*, Lat. *clerus*, properly 'lot' or 'share', but used since the 2<sup>nd</sup> Century in the language of Christianity to denote the ministers of the Church collectively i.e. 'those who have chosen Christ as their especial portion (*clerus*)'.

The adjective derived from *clerus*, *clericus* (Gr. *κληρικός*), has been in use since the 4<sup>th</sup> Century.

In O. E. the entire *clerus* (i.e. both the clergy proper and the monastic clergy) was denoted by the following expressions:

*ðæt gāstlice folc*, „*populus spiritualis*“ (Bede 84, 28 &c.), — *gāstlic* = 'ghostly', spiritual.

*Ʒodes ðeowas* (often in the weak form *Ʒodes ðeowan*), 'Servants of God' — a favorite word with Anglo-Saxon writers; and is sometimes applied even to the priests of the Jews:

*ðā Ʒodes þeowas bæron ðæt hālige scrīn*: „the servants of God bore the Ark.“ Hom. II, 214, 35.

*elþeodige biscopas and Ʒodes þeos*: „*episcopi atque clerici perigrini*“. Bede 278, 20.

*ðæt ælcas hādes menn gēorne geþūgan . . . ælc tō þām rihte ðe him tō gebyrige and hūruþinga Ʒodes þeowas: biscopas and abbudas, munecas and mynecena, prēostas and nunnan*. Æthelreds Gesetze V, 4.

*ōðre bydelas, geðūngene Godes ðeowan*. Hom. II, 126, 28.

*ealle ðā Godes þeowan*. Æthelst. V, 3. Similar, Wulf. 197, 16 (F); 198, 11 (F).

*ealra Godes ðeowena*. Wulf. 199, 12.

Etc., Etc.

*bescorene* (*men*), 'Shorn', 'tonsured', Lat. '*Tonsi*', i.e. monks and all Romish priests — so called from the ecclesiastical tonsure (O. E. *scearu*) which every member of the clergy had to receive:

*monige of Ōngelcynne, æðele ge unæðele, lædde (= læwede), bescorene, wæpned and wif*: „*nobiles, ignobiles, laici, clerici*“. Bede 406, 17. Cf. Wiht. 7: *bescoren man*, 'a clergyman'.

§ 95. To become a clergyman by receiving the tonsure was called *sceare onfōn*, 'to receive the tonsure' — from *scearu*, str. f. 'tonsure', lit. 'shearing'. Thus Bede 208, 16:

[*cyning Sigeberht*] *in mynster eode . . . and sceare onfeng: „accepta tonsura“*. Etc.

The same idea was further expressed by the phrase *tō prēoste bescean*, 'to make a priest by tonsure' (E. G. Bede 454, 30 etc.); or simply (*ge*)*scoren beon*, 'to be shorn' or 'ton-sured':

*ða wæron scorene calle munecas and sācerdas on ðone beh Scē. Petres sceare*. Bede 470, 22.

We will now proceed to discuss the two divisions of the clergy separately:

#### § 96. 1. The Clergy Proper.

The terminology for priests in the broadest sense of the word, i. e. all members of the seven or eight orders of the Romish priesthood, will be treated first. The following words will be considered:

§ 97. 1. *prēost* str. m. 'priest', a borrowed word derived originally from the Lat. *presbyter*.

The origin and history of *prēost* is very interesting, for it is clear that it is philologically impossible to derive *prēost* from *presbyter* directly by the application of the ordinary laws of sound-change.

I shall give the reader in the following a brief résumé of the various explanations that have been heretofore attempted:

§ 98. Pogatscher („Zur Lautlehre“ etc., § 142), beginning with 'presbyter', proposes to adopt as the prototype of O. E. *prēost* a Romance form *\*præbester*, corrupted from *presbyter* by popular connection with *præbere*. This would give the series: *\*præbester*, *\*prēv'st(r)e*, *\*preust(r)e*, O. E. *prēost*.

§ 99. Holthausen (A. f. d. A. 15, 290 et seq.) proposes, instead of criticising Pogatscher's suppositions — „die ihm nicht einleuchten“ — another explanation: „*Presbyter* ergab durch Syncope *\*presb'ter*, woraus *\*presp'ter*, *\*prester* hervorgehen



mussten; letztere Form wurde dann nach dem Vorbild von *magister* und *minister* volksetymologisch durch Anlehnung an *prius* zu *\*priuster* umgebildet, dem ae. *\*prēoster* entsprach. In den casus obliqui sg. *\*prēostres*, *prēostre*, sowie im ganzen Plural wurde nun durch Dissimilierung das zweite *r* ausgestossen: *prēostes* usw., dann dazu ein neuer nom. acc. voc. sg. *prēost* geschaffen“. (In support of this hypothesis, H. here cites an example of this phenomenon from O. E.)

§ 100. Against this explanation H. Varnhagen (Engl. Stud. XVI, 155) objects, on the ground that it is hard to see how, despite the evidence of *magister* and *minister*, the people came to connect *\*prester* with the Lat. *prius*. (Varnhagen seems nevertheless to have tacitly made use of Holthausen's method of explanation). — V. likewise rejects Pogatscher's hypothesis the defects of which „anf der Hand liegen: einmal ist das *praebester* besonders auf die ae. Form zugeschnitten und keine übrigen germ. oder roman. Formen deuten auf ein solches etymon; zweitens aber würde eine volksetymologische Umbildung von *presbyter* an *praebere* wohl kaum eine Form *praebester*, also zugleich mit Umstellung des *s*, sondern eher, besonders wenn man das vorhandene *praebitor* berücksichtigt, ein *praebiter* geschaffen haben, wie dies im Italienischen (*prete* für *\*prévete* aus *praebiter*) der Fall ist“.

V.'s own exposition now follows. It is his opinion „dass das lat. *prior*, Abt, wegen des *-or*, das im ae. die Endung des adverbialen Komparativs ist, vom Volke noch als Komparativ gefühlt, und dass die ursprüngliche Form *prest* wegen des *-st*, das der Ausgang der Superlativendung ist, mit jenem Wort als zugehöriger Superlativ in Verbindung gebracht wurde, und daher das *-io-* von *prior* annahm: *pri-or* — *pri-ost*, letztere Form dann zusammengezogen in *prīost*, *prēost*“.

§ 101. In conclusion we have O. E. Lindström, who (Engl. Stud. XX, 147) in union with Varnhagen rejects the views of both Pogatscher and Holthausen, adding, however, some new points not considered by Varnhagen.

But neither is the latter's explanation satisfactory to Lindström; first, because he thinks that the scheme of comparison

(i. e. the ending *-or*) of adverbs could scarcely furnish a formal parallel for substantives. Secondly, that it is doubtful whether, at the time when *presbyter* was transformed into *prest*, *prior* was still felt to be a comparative.

L. derives *preost* from an O. F. *\*preost*. This *\*preost*, he supposes, is the superlative of a supposititious form *\*preoz*, the regular development of the Latin *praepositus* or *propositus*; the French *prevost* < *praepositus* not being a popular form.

So much for Lindström. This explanation Pogatscher now (Engl. Stud. Vol. XXVII, p. 270) declares himself inclined to accept.

§ 102. My own view of the origin of this much discussed vocable is briefly expressed.

I agree with Varnhagen and Lindström in rejecting the explanations of Pogatscher and Holthausen; Lindström's criticism of Varnhagen's very pretty though, as it seems to me, incorrect hypothesis I find trivial and unconvincing. The only satisfactory objection to the *prior*-hypothesis Lindström fails to hit upon altogether, viz. that there could never have been any popular connection of *prēst* with *prior* for the very simple reason that *prior* is not found in O. E. at all!

Formally, no objection can be raised to the assumption of Rom. *\*preost* as the prototype of O. E. *preost* (cf. Sp. *prioste* < Rom. *prevosto* < *praepositus*; Diez, „Etym. Wörterb. d. Rom. Sprachen“, 5. Aufl., 1887). It should be noted, however, that the Lindström theory would prove unsatisfactory, even from this point of view, if we accept as genuine the secondary form *prēst* found in Ælfrie's Vocabulary (Wr. W. 100, 13).

But, apart from this, very powerful considerations of sense render such a derivation highly improbable. These considerations Lindström and Pogatscher, in their eagerness to supply a satisfactory formal prototype, would seem to have entirely overlooked.

Rom. *\*preost*, *\*prioste* signified a provost, or syndie — a meaning which the supposed O. E. derivative must also originally have had. But such is not the case: O. E. *preost*,

even in the earliest monuments in which it occurs, denotes only masspriest (Lat. *presbyter*), or priest in general; and there is absolutely nothing to indicate that it at any time possessed any meaning save that of priest.

§ 103. To explain O. E. *prēost* we must, it seems to me, return to the Gallo-Rom. *\*prêstre* (O. F. *prestre*) as the fundamental form.

By the process of „dissimilation“ *\*prêstre* became in the oblique cases *prêstes*, *prêste*, etc., to which a new nom. *prêst* was then formed (Holthausen); cf. here the O. H. G. secondary form *priast* (Braune, A. H. D. Gram. § 36).

Now the *ê* of *\*prêstre* is expressed in the continental Germanic languages by the vowel known as continental *ē*<sup>2</sup>, represented in O. H. G. by *ê* or the diphthongs *ia*, *ea*, *ie* (cf. *prêstar*, *priestar*, *priastar*; *ziagal*, *zeagal* etc.), and in O. E. usually by *e*, but sometimes by a diphthong — *ea* being the only one heretofore known (cf. *Crēcas* and *Crēacas*, ‘Greeks’).

Considerable uncertainty therefore exists as to the precise representatives of *ē*<sup>2</sup> in O. E.; and there is, consequently, no reason why the *eo*, *io* (rarely *ea*, *e* cf. Pogatscher § 142) of *prēost*, *priost* should not likewise be recognised as its lawful representatives.<sup>1)</sup>

§ 104. The meaning of *prēost*, as has already been suggested, is quite general and in contrast with that of its prototype *presbyter*.

Thus we find it a) for Lat. „*sacerdos*“ (bishop or masspriest: *calle dā prēostas . . būton Origenis*, „*sacerdotes*“. Oros. 272, 8. *teneant palmas in manibus usque dum offertorium canetur, et eas post oblationem offerant sacerdoti*, „ . . . *pām prēoste*“. De C. M. 409, 10; with this compare *ibid.* 404, 2: *teneant*

<sup>1)</sup> That a diphthong with an *i*-sound as its first element might represent the open *e* [ɛ] of Westgerm. *z*<sup>2</sup> seems assured by the O. H. G. representatives of *e*<sup>2</sup>; cf. *ia*, *ie* by the side of *ê*, *ea*.

The explanation of *prēost* — *prēst* given above, while perhaps not final, appears to me more probable than any of the preceding. For its suggestion I am indebted to Prof. Morsbach.

*luminaria in manibus donec post oblationem ea sacerdoti offerant, „þām mæssepræoste“.*

Note. In a single passage *præost* refers to the priest of a Jewish „*sacerdos*“: *sē* (sc. *sacerd*) *cōm of Hierusalem mid eallum his præostum* . . . *ðæt hē Iudith gesāwe*. Ass. (Æ) IX, 386.

§ 105. b) for Lat. „*clericus*“ (any member of the seven Orders), and Lat. „*presbyter*“ in the broader sense:

„*clericus, præost*“. Ælfric, Wr. W. 155, 30.

*þās hādas sýndon, hālige and tō heofenum gebringað ðæra præosta sawla ðe hý sýferlice héaldað*. Ælfric's Canons. Thorpe: Anc. Laws Instit. p. 444, XVIII.

*Zemānes hādes præostum is alyfed . . . ðæt hī sýferlice sinscipes brūcon. Witodlice ðām oðrum þe æt Godes weofode þeniað, þæt is mæssepræostum and diaconum, is ealunge forboden ælc hāmed*. Hom. II, 94, 25.

*Sixtum episcopum cum clero suo, „ðone biscop mid his præostum“*. Hom. I, 416, 3. Similar: Ibid. 416, 4, 18.

*Ea in domo sua multos habebat Christianos, & Presbyteros & clericos, absconsos, „sēo hæfde behýd on hire hāme præostas and manega læwede Crīstenan*. Hom. I, 418, 20. — etc.

§ 106. c) more rarely, for „*presbyter*“ = masspriest:

*Biscespes feoh XI gýlde. Præostes feoh IX gýlde. Diacones feoh VI gýlde. Cleroces feoh III gýlde*. Laws of Æthelbirht, 1.

*wē wyllað cýðan iúngum præostum mā þinga þæt hīg magon þeranclicor . . . heora clēricum geswutelian*. B.'s Hándbōc. Angl. VIII, 312; 17 et seq.; and similar: Can. Edg. 4.

§ 107. d) for the canon, „*canonicus*“, also called „*clericus*“ in ecclesiastical Latin; vid. the lexicon of Du Cange, Arts. ‘*canonicus*’, ‘*clerici*’:

*more canonicorum, „æfter ðeawe præosta“*. De C. M. 423, 7.

*canst þū ðone præost þe is gehāten eadzige? „Numquid illum agnoscis canonicum?“* Lives 21, 26.

*Hēr adræfde Eadgar cýng ðā præostas (þā canonicas — F.) of Ealdran Mynstre*. Chron. A, anno 964. Cf. *Hic expulsi sunt canonici*. Chr. E.

Cf. *præostlic* = *canonicus* : *canonico* more, „*præostlicum gewunan*“. De C. M. 412, 2; very similar *ibid.* 412, 14.

§ 108. 2. *cleric* (*cleroc*, *clerec*; in one passage, Wihtr. 19, *clīroc*. On *clīroc* as the proper phonetic form of the word *vid.* Pogatscher §§ 44 and 129. The form *clerc* is quite rare), from Lat. *clericus*, a priest.

a) A member of the clergy including the bishop:

*ðær wæs Mauricius gecoren tō biscope on Lúndune and Willelm tō Nordfolce and Rodbeard tō ceasterscīre . hī wæron ealle þæs cýnges clērecas.* Peterborough Chron. Anno 1085 (Early M. E.).

*clericus*, *præost* *oððe clēric*. Ælfric, Wr. W. 308, 2. Similar: B.'s Hándbōc, Angl. VIII, 300, 7, 14 etc. (*præost* and *clēric* used alternately and without discrimination).

*sē arcebiscop (sē arb', Ms.) ongan tō tellende þone pāpan eal embe þā clēricas*, „*de clericis*“. Chron. F. Anno 995; and in the same sense *ibid.* (beginning): [*hē*] *wæs of clērican*; and *ibid.* (end): *hē ðā clēricas ut of ðām mynstre ādrāf*.

b) A masspriest's deacon:

*We lærað þæt præosta gehwīlc tō sinoðe hæbbe his clēric.* Edg.'s Canons, 4. Very similar, B.'s Hándbōc, Anglia VIII, 312, 17 et seq.

c) One of the lower clergy is apparently intended in the passage Æthelbirht's Laws 1:

*Biscopes feoh XI gýlde. Præostas feoh IX gýlde. diacones feoh VI gýlde. Clēroces feoh III gýlde.*

Note. The form „*clerc*“ arose as the result of the analogy of the oblique cases, where the *i* is syncopated after the liquid *r* in Late O. E.<sup>1)</sup>

It occurs but rarely and only in Late O. E. Examples:

*Wulfric mæssepræost. Ælfric clerc. Byrhstān clerc. . . . Eadgār mæssepræost. Wulfūn clerc.* Cod. Dipl. No. 542 (Anno 969).

*ich habe gezefen Ziso biscope . . . inne tō his clerken.* Cod. Dipl. No. 837 (about Anno 1066; but the language is Transition O. E.).

*O clerice, „ealā ðu clēric“ (þu clerc. B).* Zup. Abbo, 1.

*O cleronoma, „ealā þu clēric“ (clerc. B).* *Ibid.* 99.

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Bülbring, Altengl. Elementarbuch § 434 sq. The late O. E. *clerc* is most probably due to French influence; cf. Kluge in Engl. Stud. XXI p. 335. Morsbach.]

§ 109. 3. *sācerd* str. m., a learned term taken from the Lat. *sacerdos*.

Note 1. Pogatscher (Engl. Stud. XXVII, 224 et seq.) has shown clearly that Kluge (Grdr. I, 783 = Grdr.<sup>2</sup> I, 929) and Sweet ('Student's Dict.' p. 143) are wrong in deriving *sācerd* from O. Ir. *sācart*. He points out that it is metrically necessary that the first syllable of *sācerd* should be long (i. e. either *sā-*, or *sac-* pronounced *sats-*) and shows that the derivation from Irish *sācart* is, consequently, impossible. Cf. also Pog. § 186.

Note 2. In addition to the regular plural *sācerdas*, etc., a semi-learned form *sacerdotas*, -a, -um, seems also to have been used in O. E. At any rate, Bede employs in one passage the dat. plur. '*sacerdotum*', a form which apparently indicates the above forms: *dan of ðæm fēower forespreceanan sacerdotum*, „*unus ex praefatis quatuor sacerdotibus*". 222, 28. MSS. O and Ca. have here „*sācerdum*". MS. B has „*ðāra forespreceana mæsseprēosta*".

*Sācerd*, like its Lat. prototype is used to signify a) Christian bishop and mass-priest; b) Jewish priest, high priest; c) heathen priest.

#### Examples.

§ 110. a) *wæron hēo fēower gebrōðor . . . ealle Godes sācerdas. Twēgen wæron biscopas, twēgen wæron mæsseprēostas.* Bede 232, 27.

*ſchwær sācerdas and mæsseprēostas betwih wibedum wæron slægene*, „*passim sacerdotes inter altaria trucidabantur*". Bede 52, 30.

*sē féorða [sinoð] wæs on Calcedonia. d. c. bisceopa and XXX sācerda.* Wulfst. 270, 14.

&c. &c.

b) *Forðām bebiet sio hālige æ ðæt sē sācerd scyle onfōn ðone swiððran bōgh æt ðære offrunge.* Past. 81, 18. Similar: Ælfrie's Hom. I, 406, 21.

*gāng, ætēowde þe ðām sācerde*, „*ostende te sacerdoti*" (North. and Rush. have here „*þæm measseprēost*" — a naïve conception of the Jewish hierarchy!). Mt. 8, 4.

&c. &c.

*Caiphas . . . sē wæs sācerd on ðām geare*, „*Caiphas cum esset pontifex anni illius*". Ass. (Æ) V, 10 (quoted from Jo. XI, 49); and in the same sense: Ibid. V, 16, 102, 138, 140, 150, 152. Nicod. 478, 7.

c) *ðā sācerdas*, i. e. the priests in the temple of Apollo. Lives XIV, 145. Similar, Hom. I, 416.

*Aseneth . . . dohtor þæs sācerdes of þære byrig þe ys genemmed Eliopoleas, „filiam sacerdotis Heliopoleos“. Ælfrie's Gen. 41, 45.*

&c.

§ 111. 4. *Gehādod man*, „ordained man“, — Lat. *ordinatus* — one who has received one of the Seven Ecclesiastical Orders; O. E. *gehādian* (*hādian*), „consecrate“, from *hād*, „consecration“ — vid. Note 1, 2, below, § 123:

*Nū gē habbað gehired be gehādodum mannum gē on ðære éaldan lage, gē on ðære nīwan gecyðnesse. Ælfrie's Past. 41. Thorpe.*

&c. &c.

Sometimes *gehādod man* was employed to designate the entire clergy, including monastics:

*Ʒif hwylc gehādod man, bisceop oððe mæssepreost oððe munuc oððe diacon. Poen. Ecgb. IV, 8.*

§ 112. 5. *cýrc-þingere*, ‘priest’; properly „a spiritual intercessor“, from *þingere*, *ge-þingere*, „*intercessor advocatus*“ (cf. the German verb „*dingen*“). Is is found but once:

*Sacerdos, sācerd vel cýrc þingere. Wr. W. 155, 29. Cf. also ibid. 155, 30: clericus, preost vel þingere.*

The Lat. expression „*advocatus ecclesiae*“ probably differs too greatly in meaning (Church Advocate) from O. E. *cýrc-þingere* to be considered as its prototype (?).

§ 113. 6. *æwe-wéard*, prop. „Guardian of the Law“, then „priest“, occurs only in Bl. 161, 27:

*on Herodes dagum . . . wæs swiðe mycel æwewéard, þæs noma wæs Zacharias, „ . . sacerdos quidam“ — quoted from Lk. 1, 5.*

It is quite possible that this word was compounded by the author of the homily merely as a poetical circumlocution of ‘Jewish priest’, designed to emphasize his office as the ‘guardian of the (biblical) Law’. But, on the other hand, it is also quite possible that we have before us in *æwe-wéard* the old, heathen-Germanic conception of the priestly office,

according to which the priest was likewise the judge, the interpreter of the law. Thus, too, in O. H. G. the priest is called *ewart*, *ewarto*, corresponding precisely to our word; from *ê*, law, and *wart*, *warto*, the „ward“, guardian, watcher. Very similar to this is the old expression O. H. G. „*coting*“, glossed as „*tribunus*“, but originally „*priest*“ — from *cot*, *got*, „god“, and the patronymic suffix *-ing* (cf. sub „Samaritans“, § 8); thus *coting* denoted in heathen times a man of priestly dignity, who at the same time presided over a court of law (*tribunus*). Cf. Grimm, *Myth.*, 4<sup>th</sup> Ed. p. 72 et seq.<sup>1)</sup>

§ 114. 7. \**goda* w. m. In the sense of priest this word does not occur in O. E.; but I have nevertheless thought best to cite it here because it was the ancient heathen-Germanic designation for a priest.

*Goda* exactly corresponds to the Goth. *gudja* and O. N. *goði*, and is a derivative of O. E. *god*, „god“.

In all probability the O. E. term was, soon after the migration of the Anglo-Saxons to Britain, supplanted by the Christian word *prēost*, and was in consequence doomed thereafter to exist only as the proper name „*Goda*“. Cf. Grimm, *Myth.*, 4. Aufl., p. 72, and Vol. III, 'Nachtrag', p. 37.

§ 115. Other expressions of a more general character relating to the clergy:

The Christian-biblical conception of the priest as a shepherd O. E. *hírde*, „*pastor*“, is extremely popular in O. E.; a few typical examples will suffice:

*þý læs . . . sē steall swā nēowre cirican ænige hwīle būton hēorde taltrigan ongunne*, „*pastore destitutus*“. Bede 106, 19.

*Ulf prēost wæs zeset þām biscoprice to hýrde*. Chron. (D), Anno 1050.

Latin „*minister altaris*“ is rendered in O. E. by *wēofod-begn*, from *wēofod*, altar. The expression is widely used and denotes, as does the corresponding Latin, properly only the „*ordines maiores*“ i. e. the bishop, the masspriest, and the deacon. Thus „*Institutes of Polity*“, Thorpe, p. 437:

<sup>1)</sup> [cf. also Mogk in *Grundr. d. germ. Phil.* III p. 399.]



*wēofod-þēn*, *ðæt is biscop oððe mæssepreost oððe dīacon*.  
Furthermore in *Æthelr. VIII*, 18. 22, 28.

&c. &c.

The word is glossed as „*þegn wēofodes*“ with the Lat. wordposition. Thus e. g.: *cum ministris altaris*, „*mid þenum wēofudes*“ („*weorudes*“, MS.). *De C. M.* 413, 4. Similar: *ibid.* 405, 15.

*abbas cum ministris altaris*, *sē abbod and þā ðēnas þæs hālgan wēofodes*. *Reg. Con. Zup.* 208.

*ciric-þegn* (-þēn), „minister of the church“, priest, Lat. *minister ecclesiae*, occurs but rarely:

*ne ciricþēn ne ütige, būtan biscopes geþehte*. *Æthelr. V*, 10. VI, 15.

*ac nū sýndon þeah cyrcan wīde & sīde wāce gegriðode & yfele gedēowode . . . & cyric-þēnas sýndon mæðe & munde gewelhwær bedælde*. *Inst. Pol.* 25.

In the following passage the parts are separately construed:

*Sē bīscop þā þēr gesette gōde sāngeras & mæssepreostas & manigféaldlice ciricean þēgnas*, „*ministorum, cantorum, sacerdotumque*“. *Bl.* 207.

Rather frequently, on the other hand, is to be found the compound *godes mann*, minister of the Gospel, „man of God“ (*vir Dei*?):

*sē foresprecena ȝodes man*, „*praefatus clericus*“. *Bede* 34, 22.

*clericum quendam*, „*sumne ȝodes mann preosthādes*“. *Bede* 34, 14.

&c.

In conclusion we have to note the semi-poetic epithet, occurring but rarely, — *ȝodes forboda*, „messenger of God“ (*praenuntius Dei*?):

*And ȝodes forboda wē forbēodað þæt ænig preost etc.*  
*North. Priestergesetz* 2.

§ 116. The priesthood, embracing the two groups of „*Ordines maiores*“ (bishop, priest, deacon, subdeacon) and „*Ordines minores*“ (*acolithus, exorcista, lector, ostiarius*), was denoted in O. E. as follows:

§ 117. 1. by the compound *sācerd-hād* str. m., i. e. state (*hād*) of being a *sācerd* (q. v.).

Note. The form „*sācerhād*“ (occurring only in Bede 162, 20) seems undoubtedly due to a scribal error. All the MSS excepting T have „*sācerdhād*“; cf. Miller's Bede Pt. II, p. 165.

*Sācerd-hād*, accordingly, designates the rank of a bishop or a masspriest, and furthermore the Jewish and heathen hierarchies; Lat. *sacerdotium*, *gradus episcopalis*:

*Flaminea i. episcopali gradus, biseophādas vel sācerd.* (= *sācerdhādas*). Wr. W. 239, 22.

*flaminea, sācerdhādas* (i. e. heathen priesthoods). Bout. Ald. Giles, 25.<sup>1)</sup>

*hē gesette on sācerdhād in Ierusalem Iudas þām folce tō biseope.* El. 1055.

*ðā ðe sācerdhādes wæron*, „*sacerdotali gradu*“. Bede 158, 25.

*biseopum gebyreð ðæt symle mid heom faran and mid heom wunian wēl gepūngene witan hūru sācerdhādes.* Inst. Pol. p. 428.

*ðā Zacharias his sācerd-hādes brēc* [thus in Mss. A. B. C.], „*cum sacerdotio fungeretur*“. Lk. 1, 8.

&c. &c.

§ 118. 2. *clēric-hād*, Lat. „*clericatus*“, denoting the entire clergy proper, as *clēric*, every member of the same (rare): *þā ðe clērichādes sýnd and munuchādes wilniað.* Ben. R. 107, 13, etc.

*cleratis, clērochāde.* Wr. W. 372, 10. 503, 27.

§ 119. 3. *prēost-hād* (cf. *prēost* § 97 etc.), Lat. „*clerus*“, „*sacerdotium*“ — the „priesthood“. It is not very frequent in O. E., although destined in later periods to supplant all the other words of this list:

*clericum quendam*, „*sumne ȝodes mann prēosthādes*“. Bede 34, 14.

*ȝe sint ācoren kynn ȝode and kynelīces prēosthādes*, „*regale sacerdotium*“. Past. 85, 19.

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Napier, Old English Glosses: 1901 *flaminia*, *sācerdhādes* (R. -*hādas*, as in II; 5056 *flamin(i)um*, i. *sacerdotium*, *biscophād*, *sācerdhād*; 2, 56 *flamina* i. *sācerdhādas* (G. *flaminia*); 7, 102 *flaminia*, *bisceopdōm*.]

Especially of the clergy of the bishop:

*sē wynferð wes of prēosthāde þes biscopes*, „*erat de clero ejus*“. Chad, 242.

The rank of priest:

*Iulianus nólde gehéaldan his prēost-hād on riht*. Lives 3, 290.

§ 120. 4. *prēost-heap* str. m., from *heap*, collection of objects, a „heap“ (cf. Ger. *Haufe*). The epithet is taken from the glosses of the 11<sup>th</sup> Century (Wr. W.); and is not met with elsewhere in O. E.:

*In clero*, on *prēostheape*. Wr. W. 421, 29.

It should also be noted that *heap* is likewise used in other connections to denote „a society of persons“; cf. for example:

*his ðone gecorenan hēap*, „*electos suos*“ (i. e. God's Elect). Ps. 104, 38.

*Biscopan and gehālgodan hēapan*, „to bishops and consecrated societies“. Æthelr. 7, 24 etc.

§ 121. 5. Very popular among the Anglo-Saxons was the conception of the clergy as members of a family, especially as the bishop's family: *ðā hīwan (hāzan)*, „*clerus*“; *ðæs biscopes hīwræd*, — from *hīwan* nom. plur. „*familia*“, and *hīwræd* str. m. (*hīred*), „*familia*“ (on the form *hīred* vid. Sievers, Gram.<sup>2,3</sup> § 43, Anm. 4).<sup>1)</sup>

*Ceolulf rex wilnade ðæs lóndes æt Brēmesgrēfan tō Heaberht biscope and tō his hīgum*. Cart. Sax. No. 308.

*ðem hīum tō Crīstes circan*. Ibid. No. 405.

&c. &c.

*omnis clerus ac populus*, „*call hīred and ðæt folc*“. De C. M. 421, 6. Very similar: 428, 3. 419, 2.

*Cleri, biscophīrede*. Wr. W. 499, 34. 371, 35 [put for *biscop-hīredes*].

§ 122. 6. *prēost-hīred*, properly „family of priests“ (vid. *hīred*, above), then „clergy“, is found only in the Aldhelm Glosses: *infamiam cleri*, „... *prēosthīredes*“. Bout. Ald. Giles p. 41.<sup>2)</sup>

<sup>1)</sup> [Bülbring, Elementarbuch § 379 a.]

<sup>2)</sup> [Napier O. E. Glosses 3006. *cleri*, i. *familię*, i. *populi*, *prēosthīredes*.]

§ 123. 7. Finally, we note an expression which occurs in Bede several times viz. *gefer-scipe* str. m., „societas“, „comitatus“, then „clerus“ conceived as the following of a bishop:

*of geferscipe ðæs biscopes Deosdedit*, „de clero Deusdedit Episcopus“. Bede 248, 10. Similar: *ibid.* 272, 16; etc.

Note 1. „hād“:

To distinguish the various ranks and classes of society the Anglo-Saxon employed the word *hād*, which corresponds, etymologically and otherwise, to O. H. G. *heit*, Goth. *haidus*, „manner“ or „fashion“ in which one object is related to others.

Thus the fundamental meaning of *hād* was ‘condition’, ‘rank’, then ‘person’ ‘sex’, — as may be seen by the following typical examples:

*sinod . . . ægðer ge godcūndra hāda ge woruldcūndra*, ‘A synod composed of both religious and secular classes’ Edm. I, Prol.

*be eallum hādum ge cēorle ge ēorle*, ‘Concerning all ranks, both churl and noble’. Ælfred 4, § 2.

Similar: *ælces hādes menn*. Æthelr. V, 4. VI, 2. Cnut I, 6 Prol., etc.

*swā werhādes swā wifhādes*, ‘Both men and women’. Edm. I, 1.

*se ðe āna is god þæt he is wunigende swā swā þā witegan secgað æfre on þrim hādum, būtan anginme and ende*: „God in three Persons“. Ælfr. Interr. 512.

But with the introduction of Christianity *hād* acquired an extension in meaning: it was employed from now on to translate the Lat. *ordo*, *ordinatio*, not only in a general way, but in the special senses of „Holy Order“, „priestly ordination“. In this connection note the following expressions:

*ða hālgan hādas, sancti ordines*: „the clergy“. Edm. I, 1.

*hālig hād, clerus*. Gū. 65; cf. Lat. *sanctus ordo*, „clergy“.

*tō hāde fōn*, „*ordinem suscipere*“. Ecg. Poen. 4, 8; etc. etc.

*hād bezitan*: take orders, be ordained. North. Priestergesetz 12.

*hādung*, act of ordaining, ordination, Lat. *ordinatio* (cf. *hālgung*, § 82):

*Be ðæs abbodes hādunge*, „*de ordinando abbate*“. Ben. R. 8, 20; etc.

The verb (ge-)hādian, „ordain“ (cf. *gehālgian*, § 83):

*aldorlicnisse . . . ðæt he biscopas hādian mōste*, „*ordinandi episcopos auctoritas*“. Bede 118, 27.

*Wilfrid biscop ða hi gehādode tō mynecene*. Lives XX, 35.

*hi bodedon and biscopas gehādedon*. Ælfric Test. 15, 37.

&c. &c.

Note 2. It might perhaps be thought that O. E. *hād* and its derivatives *hādian*, *hādung*, possessed even in pre-Christian times a sacerdotal character; in short, that they belonged to a heathen religious terminology. But the lack of evidence pointing to the existence of an elaborate pagan hierarchy among the Anglo-Saxons renders such an hypothesis entirely improbable. At best it can be considered only as a possibility.

§ 124. **The Clergy Proper in detail.** According to Ælfrie („Canons“. Thorpe p. 443), the A.-S. Church recognized not eight, but only seven Orders of the clergy, considering, as he says, that „bishops and masspriests belong to the same ecclesiastical order — the seventh“ (*únderstandað ðæt bæzzen sind on ānum hāde, sē biscop and sē mæsseprēost, ðæt is on ðām seofodan ciric-hāde*. Æ.'s Pastoral. Thorpe, p. 459).

To the seventh order were reckoned, further, the pope, who, it should be remembered, was long regarded by Anglo-Saxons generally only as a highly revered bishop (cf. Diss. James, p. 30 et seq., 38 et seq., 42); and of course the archbishops, metropolitans, and patriarchs.

### 1. The Pope.

§ 125. Lat. *pāpa*, signifying properly ‘spiritual father’, i. e. ‘pope’, was borrowed by O. E. unchanged from the Latin in the form of the weak masc. *pāpa*, -an; O. N. *pápe*, *páfe*; O. H. G. *bābes*, *bābist*.

The Latin title „*papa*“ was, as the reader is doubtless informed, at first applied to all bishops indiscriminately. And it was not until after the 5<sup>th</sup> Cent. that the Roman pontiff alone began to be addressed as ‘*papa*’. Consequently, O. E. *pāpa*, borrowed from the Lat. not until after the aforesaid period, designates only the pope.

On the other hand, the native ecclesiastical title *fæder*, „*pater*“, was applied not only to the pope but to the remaining clergy as well, particularly to the abbot (vid. sub „Abbot“, § 194). E. g.:

*Ðū, ūre fæder* (= *sē biscop*). Hom. I, 416, 9, and *Ðū, mīn fæder!* ibid. Similar: Ibid. 418, 3. 420, 15. Bl. 225, 16.

In O. E. we frequently find the pope referred to as *hālig*, „holy“; *ēadig*, *gesælig*, „blessed“, — as in the case of the saints, apostles, martyrs, etc. E. g.:

*ðæs ēadigan pāpan Sē Gregories*, „*beati papae Gregorii*“. Bede 2, 23.

*Gregorius*, *sē hālga pāpa*. Hom. II, 116.

*þæs ēadigan fæder Gregorius*, „*beati patris*“. Bede 56, 22.

§ 126. The title „*domne*“, Lat. *dominus* (on the Gallo-Rom. origin of this word and the time of its adoption — circa 700 — vid. Pogatscher § 173), occurs but seldom in O. E.:

*ðā was domne Leo pāp(a) on Rōme.* Chron. (A), Anno 853.

Said of others than the pope:

*domne Helias patriarcha on Ĵerusalem.* Leechd. II, 290.  
*mān domne biscop.* Bede 196, 17.

§ 127. As representative of Christ, the pope does not, to my knowledge, occur in O. E. literature. This lofty prerogative was claimed and held for centuries by the A.-S. kings who, as „*hlāfordas and mūndboran*“, Lords and protectors, of the people in matters secular were also regarded as the earthly representatives of the Supreme Protector, Christ, against the Evil One, i. e. as „*Crīstes ġespelian*“, „*Christi vicarii*“.

For further information in this regard, cf. Schmid's glossary to his „Gesetze d. A.-S.“ sub „*cyning*“; also Liebermann, p. 63.

Thus we read in the laws of King Æthelred VIII, 2: „*... hē his āgenne wer Crīste and þām cyninge ġesylle ... forðām crīsten cyning is Crīstes ġespelia ġetēald on crīstenre þeode.* Cf. also *ibid.* VIII, 42.

Instead of *ġespelia*, the form *speliend* — properly pres. part. of the verb (*ġe-*)*spelian*, to represent — occurs in one place:

„*Sē cyning is Crīstes sylfes spelizend.*“ Bede, Cited in Bos. Toll. from Wheelock's Ed. (1643) p. 151, 39 (not in Miller!)

§ 128. The pope appears at times in O. E. simply as „bishop“, the Papal See being referred to as „Episcopal See of Rome“:

*ðurh sanctum Gregorium ðæs rōmāniscan setles bisceop.* Leechd. III, 432, 21. And:

*Mīd ġewisse sē foresæda bisceop.* *Ibid.* (i. e. Pope Gregory).  
*ðone rōmāniscan biscop-stōl.* Hom. II, 126.

But generally the Papal See is known as:

*ðæt pāp-setl.* Shrine 49, 17.

*ðæt pāpsēld.* Blick. 205, 20.

*ðæs pāpan setl.* Hom. II, 132, 18.

*ðæt apostolice setl:* the Apostolic See. Hom. II, 132, 10.

Cf. Bede 252, 18: *ðæt apostolice seðl*, „*sedes apostolica*“.

For *sēld*, *setl*, and *seðl*, Lat. „*sedes*“, vid. Sievers, Gr. 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed. § 196, 2. Ibid. 3<sup>rd</sup> Ed.<sup>1)</sup>)

The papal dignity, the papacy, is, as we expect from the analogy of such compounds as *prēosthād* and the like, *sē pāp-hād*:

*Gregorius, siððan hē pāpan-hād únderfēng.* Hom. II, 126, 24.

Perhaps also *sē pāp-dōm*, as in the passage Chron. Anno 591; this form is, however, by no means securely ascertained for classic A.-S., as my only passage is taken from a MS. compiled at a much later period, probably, than the classic.

## 2. The Legate.

§ 129. A word that signifies exclusively the papal legate („*legatus*“) will be found nowhere in O. E. literature, although the Lat. expression „*apostolicus legatus*“ occurs already at an early date (cf. example below). This coincides likewise with the remark of Gregory VII cited by Du Cange as the earliest instance of the use of the expression:

*„Romana ecclesia hanc consuetudinem habuit ab ipsis suae fundationis primordiis, ut ad omnes partes quae Christianae religionis titulo prae-notantur suos Legatos mitteret“* etc.

It is not until we reach the Early M. E. monuments that we find in use the term *legat* = „*legatus apostolicus*“. Thus in the Peterborough Chron. Anno 697: *ic Adrianus legat hit ȝetē*, „*ego, Adrianus, Apostolicus legatus, haec approbo*“ (The same in Col. Dipl. V, 30, 25).

This use of *legat* in earliest M. E. might, perhaps, indicate the presence of the word in English several decades earlier — possibly as early as the end of the 11<sup>th</sup> Cent. and still in O. E.

§ 130. But apart from the possibility of an O. E. *legat*, there is to be found with some degree of certainty only the native vocable *ærend-raca*, „messenger“ in general, for the „*legatus*“ of the pope (for *ærendraca* vid. § 45):

*on ðis tīman wæron ærendracan ȝesénd fram Adriane pāpan tō Éngla lánde, tō ȝenūweanne þone ȝelēafan . . . and*

<sup>1)</sup> [Bülbring, Elementarbuch § 522.]

*hī man mid wurdscipe nderfeng.* Chron. (F) Anno 785. Cf. Bede 150, 16, where the same word is employed to designate the legate of an archbishop:

*Romanus þære ceastre biscop wæs from Iusto þām ærce-biscope tō ærendwrecan onsended tō Honorie þām pāpan, „... legatarius missus“.*

Possibly we may regard the word *gespelia* (treated above, § 127), „representative“, also as an O. E. equivalent of the Lat. „*legatus apostolicus*“; in fact in one passage it relates directly to the papal legate in England (Augustinus): cf. Leechd. III, 434, 10:

*he [sc. sē pāpa Gregorius] gēorne þone his gespelian [sc. sanctum Agustinum] þurh ærendracan manode.*

### 3. The Cardinal.

§ 131. The word *cardinal* is not met in English before the Early M. E. period, although we have in ecclesiastical Latin the „*Cardinales*“ of the Roman Church at a very early date in the Middle Ages; vid. Du Cange. The earliest example of the use of the word in English is found in the Peterborough Chron. for the year 1125:

*on þes ilces gāres sēnde sē pāpa of Rōme tō þise lānde an Cardinal, Iohan of Creme wæs gehāten.*

### 4. The Archbishop.

§ 132. Upon the introduction of Christianity O. E., in accord with the other Germanic languages, rendered the Lat. *archiepiscopus* by the semi-learned compound *erce-biscop*. I have said semi-learned because of the foreign prefix (*erce* from Lat. *archi-*) for which no Anglo-Saxon could have a linguistic sense.

As for the latter half of the compound, *biscop*, it had already been incorporated into the language long before the introduction of Christianity, and must therefore be regarded as a popular word.

The native prefix corresponding to „*archi-*“ was *hēah-*, lit. „high“ (as in *hēahfæder*, a patriarch, lit. „high father“; etc.); and, in fact, a *hēah-biscop* = *archiepiscopus* does occur, but only in a few cases. These I shall proceed to cite:

*Birhtwāld, Bretone hēahbiscop.* Wiht. Prol.



*mid geðeahhte Wulfhelmes mīnes hēh-bisceopes, „Wulfhelmi, archiepiscopi“. Æthelstan I, Prol.*

*archiepiscopus sive summus episcopus, „hēhbiscop (hēhbisc’ MS.). D. Rit. 194, 14.*

In D. Rit., *hēhbiscop* occurs at times for Lat. „*pontifex*“: *beati Silvestri confessoris atque pontificis, „... & æc hēh biscepes“.* 49, 3.

*Marcelli martyris atque pontificis, „... & æc hēh biscepes“.* 49, 11. Very similar: 53, 20. 57, 7. 72, 5 etc.

In all other cases, the word *hēah* in the expression *hēah biscop* is used adjectively: e.g.:

[*ceadda*] *wes hēh biscop on orleahstre.* Chad. 252.

In this case *hēh biscop* must mean only „*pontifex*“; great, famous, bishop, since Chad was never an archbishop. Similarly we read in Bede 450, 11: *sē hēah bysceop & sē hālgā Willfrid, „antistes eximius“.*

§ 133. *erce-biscop* (*ærce-biscep, -biscop; arce-bisceop, -biscop*).

The word *biscop* can not be directly explained from Lat. *episcopus*. A Romance *\*ebescobu* or *\*ebescopu* (according to Heyne in his „*Wörterbuch*“, Low Lat. „*biscopus*“; but cf. Pogatscher, § 365) is accepted as the immediate prototype, from which were developed the Common West-Germanic borrowed terms — O. E. *biscop*, O. S. *biskop*, O. H. G. *biscof*.

On O. E. *biscop* <  $\begin{cases} *ebescopu. \\ *ebescobu. \end{cases}$  vid. Pogatscher, § 365 and „*Nachtrag*“ to § 365.

Note 1. From *\*ebescobu* we should of course expect not *biscop*, but *\*bescob* or *\*biscob*, the form *biscop* being, according to Pogatscher, „ein blosser Notbehelf auf Seite der westgerm. Lautvertretung“. And just here the North. dialect offers us a very interesting wordform, *biscob*, — with ‘b’ — found with considerable frequency along with the *p*-forms (*pontificis, hēhbiscobes — hēhbiscob’* Ms. D. Rit. 76, 5. *biscobas* Lind. Mk. 15, 11. *biscob* Mk. p. 2; 2. Vid. Cook for still more. Once in Bede: *biscobwyrðe* 398, 19).

Might not this *biscob* be the missing normal development from *\*ebescobu*?

As to the assumption that *biscop* (*biscob*) is from Low Lat. *biscopus*, it is difficult to see upon what authority Heyne and others base the existence of such a form. It is certainly not found in the great lexicon of Du Cange; and, as to a supposititious existence, such a form as *\*biscopus* — half popular, half classic — would, as Pogatscher well remarks (§ 365), be impossible in the face of the entirely popular developments

of *episcopus* in all the Rom. languages. But this much is, however, very probable (Pog. 'Nachtrag'); viz. that the West-Germanic forms represent a passing stage of the popular development from *episcopus*, \**episcopo* > \**ebescobu*, in which the *p*-sound was retained longer in the unaccented syllable than in the accented. Certainly the North. *biscob* as compared with the *p*-forms would seem to point to some such middle stage.

Note 2. Kluge's surmise that *biscop* owes its present form to popular connection with *bi-* and *scop* will scarcely hold, in view of the fact that the full stress in all substantive compounds of *bi-* falls upon the first syllable; e. g. O. H. G., O. E. *bi-spel*, O. E. *bi-word*, etc. Thus \**piscopo* would have become *bi-scop* and not *biscop*. In other words, with *bi-* accented, only a long *i* is possible. Cf. Kluge in Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, 338.

§ 134. As to the prefix *erce- ærce- arce* (no form \**earce-*, with the breaking, has been met with by me), it should be noted that only *erce- (ærce-)* is phonologically justified: the form *arce-* being the result of the subsequent attraction of the Lat. „*archi-*“ upon *erce-*. Vid. Pogatscher, § 44; vid. also the Oxford Dict., article (*arch-*); Sievers Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 79, Anm. 3.

#### A few examples.

*sē sexta ærcebiscop.* Bede 252, 6.

*Ærcebiscopes borges-bryce.* Alfred's Laws. Schmidt. 3. Lieb. 3.

*Her þeodorus mon hādode tō ercebiscepe.* Chron. (A) Anno 668.

*archiepiscopus, arcebiscop.* Ælfric. Wr. W. 155, 7.

*eadige arcebisceop.* Chron. (C) Anno 1044.

*on þisan gære gefōr Eadsie arcebiscop.* Chron. (D) 1051.

The archbishop conceived of as bishop is termed quite frequently simply „*biscop*“. Thus, „*þeodor biscop*“. Bede 260, 23, &c. &c.

*Sē (pāpa) sēnde pallium Stigande biscope.* Chron. (D) 1058. Cf. with this Chron. (E) 1058: *sē ylca pāpā sēnde Stigande arcebiscope pallium hider tō lānde.*

§ 135. The archiepiscopal dignity, „*archiepiscopatus*“, is called in O. E. *sē erce-biscopphād*, or in the popular abbreviated form *erce-hād (ærce-, ærce-hād)*:

*Laurentius ærcebiscopphāde onfēng.* Bede 106, 23.

*ðæt his æftergengan symle ðone pallium and ðone ercehād æt ðām apostolican setle . . feccan sceöldon.* Hom. II, 132, 10.

Just as *biscop* appears for *erce-biscop*, so also we find quite often the simple *biscophād*, „*episcopatus*“, for *ercebiscophād*, *ercehād*: Bede 258, 3, etc., etc.

§ 136. For the archiepiscopal consecration, ordination, cf. sub *hād* § 123 N. 1, 2.

The following passages will serve to illustrate:

*Hēr þeodorus mon hādode tō ercebiscope.* Chron. (A) Anno 668.

Instead of *hādian*, *gehālgian* often occurs (*gehālgran* = both „consecrate“ and „ordain“):

*þeodor biscep hine gehālgode.* Chron. (A) Anno 670.

Etc. Etc.

§ 137. The especial insignium of the archbishop was his „*pallium*“, or official cloak, O. E. *sē pallium*, from which arose the peculiar expression „*pallium onfōn*“, to receive the pallium, i. e. to become archbishop, found sometimes instead of the more usual „*ercebiscophāde onfōn*“ (Bede 106, 23 etc.):

*Hēr Nodhelm ærce-biscep onfēng pallium from Romana biscepe.* Chron. A, Anno 736. Similar, Ibid. Anno 764, 831, &c.

§ 138. The archbishopric was known as *ercebiscope*, *erce-riçe*, from *riçe* (Ger. 'Reich'), literally „kingdom“; or, again, the simple *biscope*, *biscopdōm* were used (analogous to *biscophād* = *ercebiscophād*). It is worthy of remark that I have never found an *ercebiscopdōm*, although *biscopdōm* is much in vogue; perhaps, however, its use may be concluded from the fact that we find it in the Peterborough Chronicle; cf. Chron. E, Anno 616: *æfter him fēng Mellitus tō ercebiscopdōme*.

#### Examples.

*Hēr forðferde Sigeric arcebisceop and fēng Ælfric Wiltūnsāre bisceop tō þām arcebisceopriçe.* Chron. (A) Anno 994. Similar, Chron. (F) Anno 1051.

*on þisan geare gefōr Eadsie arcebisceop . . . and sē cýng séalde Rotbearde . . . ðæt arceriçe.* Chron. (D) Anno 1051.

*Her Wulfstān arcebiscop onfeng eft biscoprices on Dorceceastre.* Chron. (D) Anno 954.

*Her Eadsige arcebiscop forlēt ðæt biscoep-rice for his untrummysse.* Chron. (C) Anno 1044.

The use of the above mentioned word „*pallium*“ in the sense of archbishopric is rare and marks a very interesting metonymy:

*ðā Rodbert arcebiscop . . fērde him ofer sǣ and forlēt his pallium. . . and Stigand biscop feng tō þan arcebiscoprice.* Chron. (F) Anno 1051.

§ 139. The Lat. „*sedes archiepiscopalis*“, the archiepiscopal see, is rendered in O. E. by *erce-stōl* (*arce-stōl*), *ercebiscopstōl*, or by *biscopseðl* (Bede 116, 25. 90, 13 etc.), *biscoepsetl* (Bede 478, 2 etc.):

*ǣlc oðer biscop scōlde bēon munec-hādes mann ðe ðone arcebiscopstōl gesǣte on Cantwarebyri.* Chron. (F) Anno 995. Earle p. 331. Vid. also Chron. (F) Anno 616, 829.

*arce-stol* occurs:

*Æðelgār b' [= biscop] feng æfter him tō arce-stōle.* Chron. (C) Anno 998. Furthermore: Chron. (F) Anno 870 (Plummer p. 283). Chron. (D) 1069.

§ 140. The archbishop as a metropolitan, i. e. the bishop whose see is the capital city of a province, is called „*sē éaldor-biscop*“ — from *éaldor*, „*senior*“, „*princeps*“ — on account of the superior prominence of his position among his colleagues.

Cf. *éaldor-apostol*, „*princeps apostolorum*“; *éaldor-burh*, „*metropolis*“, &c.:

*Godwine, áldorbisscope Gallia rices, „a Godwino metropolitano episcopo Galliarum“.* Bede 408, 8.

In certain connections, the pope was also entitled „*éaldorbiscop*“ (For the Anglo-Saxon estimate of the position of the pope vid. § 127.):

*þā wæs in ðā tīd Vitalius pāpa, ðæs apostolican seðles áldorbiscop, „sedi apostolicae praeerat“.* Bede 252, 19.

§ 141. The title of *éaldorbiscop* was not, however limited to Christian pontiffs: it was also freely employed to

designate the chief priests of both Jews and heathen (cf. sub „Bishop“):

[Herod] *ðā gesamnode ealle ðā éaldor-biscopas and ðæs folces bōceras*. Hom. I, 78.

Similar: *sē éaldor-biscop*. Hom. I, 46. II, 422. II, 226. 248, 9, 15, 20. 250. Ass. (Æ) VI, 153.

In one passage this compound occurs in the sense above stated, but in reversed order, „*bisceopéaldras*“ [Ass. (Æ) V, 51].

Instead of *éaldorbiscop* = High Priest, the term *heafod-biscop*, properly „Head-bishop“, is sometimes found:

*Abiadar ðæra Iudæiscra heafod-biscop*. Hom. II, 420, 31.

In the Alfredian (?) translation of Bede occurs the word *éaldorbiscop* as title of the heathen chief priest of the Anglo-Saxons, Cēfi:

*Him þā answarode his éaldorbisceop, Cēfi wæs hāten, „primus pontificum“*. Bede 134, 11. Excepting here, the same priest is called simply „*biscop*“, Lat. *pontifex*: Bede 138, 2 etc.

§ 142. 5. The highest official of the Eastern Church, the Patriarch, Lat. *patriarcha*, was designated in O. E. usually „*sē patriarcha*“ — as in Lat.

Only once do we find the native compound, *hēah-fæder*, (High Father) used in this connection, a word which otherwise, as we have seen (vid. § 41), signifies only the patriarchs of the Old Testament. The passage in question will be found in *Narratiuncula*, *Passio Scae. Marg.* 40, 4 et seq.:

*Deodosius . . sē wæs þære hæðenre hēhfæder, deofolgeld hē wúrðode, „Theodosii . . qui erat gentilium patriarcha et idola adorabat“*.

The more usual title, *patriarcha*, occurs in O. E. in the following passages:

*þis eal hēt ðus secgean Alfrede cyninge, domne Helias, patriarcha on Ĵerusalem*. Leechd. II, 290.

*þær wæs sē pāpa on and sē patriarcha*. Chron. (D), Anno 1050.

§ 143. 6. The Bishop.

O. E. *biscop* differs considerably in meaning from its Latin prototype „*episcopus*“, since the latter refers only to the

Christian ecclesiastical office,<sup>1)</sup> while on the other hand the former possesses not alone a special, but also quite a general sense: *biscop* translates not only „*episcopus*“, but also *pontifex*, *flamen*, *antistes*, *sacerdos*, &c. in their various uses as Christian, Jewish,<sup>2)</sup> and heathen chief priests.

Furthermore, *biscop* embraces, as far as concerns priests of the Christian religion, as well the „*suffraganeus*“ or bishop in the narrower sense of the word, as the „*archiepiscopus*“ (cf. § 134).

On the form of the word the reader is referred to §§ 133; 133 n. 1, 2.

§ 144. Note. A native equivalent of the Lat. „*episcopus*“ occurs only in one passage and seems to be an attempt on the part of the translator to render literally in O.E. the Gr. Lat. word. I refer to D. Rit. 21, 4, where the compound „*hēah-scēawere*“, High Seer, Overseer, ἐπι-σκοπος, — from *scēawian*, σκέπτω, Ger. *schauen* — is found for bishop:

*Christus . . . pontifex futurorum bonorum*, „*. . . hēh-scēawere vel biscop (bisc' MS)*“.

After thus analyzing the meaning of *biscop*, we shall now proceed to exemplify the special significations of the word:

§ 145. As a Christian pontiff — „*episcopus*“:

*wæs ærest lāded tō Bretta biscopum*, „*Britonum sacerdotibus*“. Bede 100, 4.

*Iustus sē biscop*, „*Iustus superstes*“. Bede 116, 26.

*biscopas mid folcum . . . fornumene wæron*, „*praesules cum populis*“. Bede 52, 31.

*ðæs ārwrðan biscopes Cynebyrhtes*, „*reverendissimi antistitis Cuneberti*“. Bede 4, 22.

*Iohannes sē apostel . . swā swā þā biscopas bādon begān þā féorðan bōc be Crīstes godcūndnysse*. Ælfrie Test. 12, 42.

*Flamen, biscop*. Wr. W. 188. 21. 406, 8. 407, 15. 499, 8.

Etc., etc.

§ 146. The suffragan („*suffraganeus*“) was officially termed in O.E. „*sē lēod-biscop*“, i. e. „*bishop of the common*

<sup>1)</sup> I speak of „*episcopus*“ in a religious sense; consequently no reference is made to the profane and secular senses of the word.

<sup>2)</sup> Also O. H. G. „*bischof*“ is found in the sense of Jewish High Priest; vid. Raumer p. 297.

people“; but it should be borne in mind that usually the general title „biscop“ was used even when *lēod-biscop* was meant.

The first part of this compound is from the word *lēod* (str. f.), nation, people.

By rendering the Lat. „*suffraganeus*“ by his *lēod-biscop* the Anglo-Saxon emphasized the popular character of this office as contrasted with the higher, and therefore much less popular, episcopal offices. Cf. for example such compounds as e. g. *lēod-hata*, „tyrant“, lit. „hater of the people“; *lēod-gebyrga*, „protector of the people“, i. e. „prince“ etc.

### Examples.

*episcopus, lēodbiscep.* Wr. W. 307, 40.

*Hēr forðferde Oskytel arcebiscep. Sē wæs ārest tō Dorkeceastre tō lēodbiscope gehālgod, and eft . . . tō ærcebiscope.* Chron. (B), Anno 971.

*þær wæron æt his hālgunge twēgen ercebisceopas and tyn lēodbisceopas.* Chron. (C), Anno 979.

*sē hālga Cudberhtus, Lindisfarneniscere zeladunge lēodbiscep.* Hom. II, 148, 22. II, 152. Similar, Earle, Land Ch., 229, 230.

Note 1. From O. E. *lēod-biscop* is derived, according to Kahle (p. 27), the O. N. *ljóðbiskop*, „suffragan“.

Note 2. I cannot agree with Kahle in his interpretation of O. N. *ljóðbiskop* (< O. E. *lēod-biscop*) as „Bishop to the heathen“ („Bischof an die Heiden“) i. e. missionary bishop. Kahle bases his view on the meaning of O. E. *lēod*, concerning which he says (Diss. p. 28): „O. E. *leob* [*lēod* is meant] übersetzt Lat. ‘*gentes*’ in der Bedeutung ‘Heiden’, und die Bischöfe waren eingesetzt ‘*ut gentilibus prædicarent verbum dei*’.“

But this meaning of *lēod* is very unusual, occurring as far as I know only once or twice in North.-Merc. (vid. § 5) and not at all in W. S. *Leod* signifies *populus*, *gens*, in general, and means „*gentiles*“, heathen, only when the adj. *hæðen* is affixed (cf. the citations in Bos. Toll.), just as it stands for Christians when *cristen* is added.

On the other hand we frequently find *lēod-* in compounds denoting the native-born people, as the passages quoted above § 146 will show. The same development is found in O. H. G. cf. forms like N. H. G. *Leutpriester*, M. H. G. *liutpriester* — „Pfarrer, Weltpriester, im Gegensatz zu Ordensgeistlichen“ (Grimm, Deutsches Wörterb.; and cf. the passages from the M. H. G. there cited in proof), or N. H. G. *Leutkirche*, M. H. G. *liutkirche*, the parish church, as contrasted with the cathedral (cf. Grimm).<sup>1)</sup>

<sup>1)</sup> After writing the above, I find my view confirmed by Taranger,

§ 147. With reference to his diocese (*scīr*, fem.) the bishop is known as „*sē scīrebiscop*“, „*episcopus provinciae*“:

*sē munuc ðe mynster næbbe, cume tō scīrebiscope. Æthelr. V, 6.*

*Gif prēost on unriht ut of scīre hād begite, . . . polian his hādes, būton scīre-biscop heom hādes ȝeunne. Schmidt, North. Priestergesetz, 12.*

§ 148. The Lat. expression „*episcopatus*“ contains two conceptions: a) the office or dignity of a bishop, the episcopacy; and b) the diocese or bishopric.

For „*episcopatus*“, episcopacy, we have in O. E. *biscopphād*, *biscopdōm* and *biscoprice*.

In the same sense *biscop-scīr* appears to be used at times, a word that usually signifies only „diocese“. This rare use of *biscopscīr* will be clear if we consider that the original meaning of *scīr* was business, office; cf. O. H. G. „*scīra haban, procurare*“ (Schade, Wörterbuch 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed.); also O. E. *scīr*, „*procuratio*“, „*dispensatio*“, etc. Vid. Bos. Toll. for other examples.<sup>1)</sup>

„*Episcopatus*“, diocese, is rendered by O. E. *biscoprice* (bishop-ric) and *biscop-scīr* (the bishop's 'shire'):<sup>2)</sup>

#### § 149. Examples.

a) *Flaminea i. episcopali gradus, bisceophādas. Wr. W. 239, 22.*

*Flamina, biscopphādas. Wr. W. 403, 33; similar, Ibid. 403, 34. 512, 28.*

who shows clearly that the naming of the bishop according to his *leod* and *scīr* was a system peculiar to the Anglo-Saxon state and having no connection whatever with his activity as a missionary. Vid. Taranger pp. 60–62.

<sup>1)</sup> Compare also O. E. „*prāvostscīr*“, „*praepositura*“, office of provost, Ben. R. Log. 111, 15 etc.

<sup>2)</sup> Bos. Toll. adds also *biscopdōm* (*bisceopdōm*, *biscepōm*) in this sense; but his examples from Bede (Miller 170, 8 and 170, 3) are all spurious, the MSS. all reading *biscop-scīre*. His sole genuine quotation (*Wine heold þone biscepōm iii ȝear; and sē Ægelbryht onfeng Persa biscepōmes . . . Chron. A, anno 660.*) should be translated 'office of bishop', bishopric.



*magni episcopatus, heālices biscophādes.* Bout. Ald., Giles p. 40: „*summi pontificatus*“.<sup>1)</sup>

*biscophād, sacerdotium.* Bout. Ald., Giles p. 72: „*pontificium et flaminium*“.<sup>1)</sup>

*biscephād, sacerdotium* (of the heathen). Oros. 164, 31.

*he hæfde ðæt bisceprīce L wintra æt Scirebúrnan.* Chron. (A), Anno 867.

*Wine hæold ðone biscepdōm iii ȝear and se Ægelbryht onfeng Persa biscepdōmes on Galwalum bi Signe.* Chron. (A) Anno 660.

*pontificium, biscepdōm.* Bout. Ald., Giles p. 72.<sup>1)</sup>

Etc., etc.

As an example of *biscop-scīr* = ‘episcopacy’, I will quote Bede 170, 8:

*he onfeng his āgenre ceastre bisscopscīre Parisiace hātte, „accepto episcopatu Parisiacae civitatis“.*

b) *ðām biscope ðe sēo hālige stōw on his bisceoprīce is, „episcopi ad cuius diocesim pertinet lucus ipse“.* Ben. R. 119, 9.

*Diocessis vel parochia, bisceoprīce.* Wr. W. 307, 41.

*adjacentes domus aut diocesis, bisceoprīca.* Bout. Ald., Giles p. 27: „*parochias*“.<sup>1)</sup>

*Diaecesis vel parochia, bisceopscīr vel biscopric.* Ælfrie. Wr. W. 155, 8.

*Diocessin, bisceopscīr.* Wr. W. 386, 32.

*ādrifen wæs of his bisceopscīre.* Bede 300, 25.

Etc.

§ 150. The expression „episcopal see“, *biscopsedl* etc., corresponds precisely to the rendition of archiepiscopal see (§ 139). I shall therefore cite in this place only a few passages in which *biscopsedl* apparently denotes not the see but the diocese; e. g.:

*Wini wæs ādrifen . . of his biscopsedle, „de episcopatu“.* Bede 170, 11. Very similar, Ibid. 298, 26. 300, 5.

Probably, however, the translator only put *biscopsedl* as a free rendering of the Lat. „*episcopatus*“, instead of the more accurate *bisceoprīce*, „*bishopric*“.

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Napier, Old Engl. Glosses s. v.]

For the O. E. equivalents of the expressions „to ordain bishop“ (*biscop gehādian*, *gehālgian*), „be made, become, bishop“ (*biscophāde onfōn*, *tō biscopdōme*, *-rice*, *fōn*), „receive the episcopal pallium“ (*pallium onfōn*), the reader is referred to §§ 136, 137.

§ 151. The verb *biscopian*, „to confirm“, is interesting as bearing witness to the remarkable flexibility of the O. E. language.

Of *biscopian* we have also a participial adjective, *unbiscopod* (a „*biscopod*“ is not found), „not confirmed“. Formally, this word would appear to have been molded after Lat. „*episcopare*“; but the meaning of the latter is not „to confirm“, but the much broader one, „to perform the functions of the episcopal office“, in general.

#### Examples of *biscopian*.

*sē bisceop bið zesett tō hādizenne prēostas and tō bisceopzenne cild.* Canons of Ælfrie 17.

*nē hine mon fulluhte fūrðon fullian nē mōste nē biscopian.* Eccl. Inst. 22.

*nē nænne man man nē læte unbiscopod tō lānge.* Wulf. 300, 27.

In the same sense

*unbiscopod.* Can. Edg. 15.

*unbiscopod.* Wulf. 120 (*unbiscopod*, MS. CE).

§ 152. From the verb *biscopian* is derived the noun *biscopung*, ‘confirmation’, ‘the act of confirming’ (rare):

*sē hālga gāst hī [= ðās seofanfēaldan Godes gyfa] tōdæld . . crīstenum mannum, ælcum be his mæðe and be his mōdes gēornfulnesse, ealswā biscopas on biscopunge [= biscopunge] tō gode sylfum wilniad gēorne.* Wulf. 51, 11 et seq.

Note. This passage is important as establishing the use of *biscopung* in O. E. times. The Oxf. Dict. (Art. ‘*Bishoping*’) has no example earlier than the year 1175.

§ 153. 2. *Biscop* in the Jewish hierarchy, as designation of the chief priests:

Examples are very numerous:

*ða þenas cōmon tō þām bisceopum and tō þām phariseon, „ad pontifices et phariseos“. Joh. 7, 45.*

*mon lædde Aristobolus tō Rōme gebūdenne; sē wæs ægðer gē heora (sc. Iūdeā) cyning gē heora biscop. Oros. 238, 13.*

*sē Caiphas wæs ðæs gēares bisceop. Joh. 18, 13; Lat. qui erat pontifex.*

&c. &c.

Of Aaron:

*Hē (Moises) . . . . . scrīdde þone bisceop (Aaron) mid līnenum rēafe, „pontificem“. Lev. Grein 8, 6.*

*of Aarones cynne þæs forman bisceopes. Ass. (Æ) II, 80. Similar Exod. Grein 29, 30.*

Note. Melchisedec also, that interesting and mysterious character of the Old Testament, who was both king and „priest of the Most High God“ at the same time, appears in O. E. with the title of „bishop“, as in Gen. 2103: *sē mæra Melchisedec, lēoda bisceop*; and Gen. 2123: *godes bisceop*.

He was otherwise known as simply *sācerd* (*Melchisedech . . . sē wæs cining and godes sācerd, „sacerdos altissimi“*. Ælf's Genesis 14, 18, and very similar, Screamunga 22; 5, 7), or *mæsseprēost*, „mass-priest“ (vid. sub *mæsseprēost*, § 156, for the examples, and compare with § 156 — above).

### 3. *Biscop* as heathen priest.

§ 154. The instances of this use of the word are likewise comparatively numerous.

The corresponding Latin terms are generally „*sacerdotes*“, „*pontifices*“, „*antistites*“, or „*augures*“.

A limited number of passages will suffice:

*ða Egyptiscan bisceopas, „sacerdotum Aegyptiorum“. Oros. 34, 17.*

*ða bebēad Alexander ðām hæðnan biscepe, „fani ipsius Antistitem“. Oros. 126, 27.*

*þēh þe heora biscopas from hiora godum sæden . . . „auguribus“. Oros. 138, 34. Similar, Ibid. 140, 2, etc.*

&c.

### 4. The Priest.

§ 155. In rendering Lat. *presbyter*, the O. E. always emphasizes the principal function of the priestly

office, viz. the sacrifice of the mass. Thus we find the priest designated

a) *mæsseprēost*, the 'mass-priest', from *prēost* and O. E. *mæsse*, a word derived from the Lat. *missa*, 'mass', through the Romance.

The *æ* of *mæsse* is difficult to explain, but the reader is referred to the exposition given by Morsbach, *Literaturblatt f. German. u. Roman. Philologie*, 1889, No. 3, column 86 et seq., as the best solution of the difficulty yet offered.

#### Forms.

*messeprīost*, Ct. 37, 35 (Kent, 9<sup>th</sup> Cent.). *messeprēost*, Ct. 41, 32 (Kent, 835). Rush. Mt. 8, 4. Earle, Land Ch. pp. 254, *mæsse prēost* 255 (11<sup>th</sup> Cent.). *mæsse prīost*. Chron. A 669. Past. 7, 22. Earle, Land Ch. p. 77 (Anno 805—831).

Furthermore in North.:

*mæsa-prēast*, Lind. Mt. 2, 4. *meaessa-prēost*, Lind. Mt. p. 9, 16. *measse-prēost*, Lind. Mt. 8, 4. *meas-p'ēost*, D. Rit. 194, 9, etc. *measa-p'stas*, ibid. 194, 10. Lind. Mt. 12, 5. *mesa-prēost*, ibid. 12, 4.<sup>1)</sup>

#### Examples.

*wæs sē æresta abbud þæs ylcan mynstres Petrus hāten, mæsseprēost, „Petrus presbyter“.* Bede 90, 26.

*þæs mynstres prōfost and regolwéard wæs in ðā tīd Boisel, sē wæs mycelra mægena mæsseprēost, „sacerdos“.* Bede 360, 32.

*Arrius sē mæsseprēost, „Arius Alexandrinae urbis presbyter.“* Oros. 282, 33.

*gyf hwylc mæsseprēost wilnað þæt hine mon tō munuchāde tō mynstre nderfō . . .* Ben. R. 105, 14.

&c. &c.

*mæsseprēost* is much more frequently employed for the priest (mass-priest) than any of the synonymous terms quoted below. The latter are, in fact of comparatively rare occurrence.

Before proceeding further, it should be added that in the word *mæsseprēost* the prefix *mæsse-* is in so far essential as

<sup>1)</sup> [For north. *meassa* cp. Bülbring, *Altengl. Elementarbuch* § —.]

*prēost* alone possesses quite a general meaning, denoting a priest of any rank whatever, while, as we have seen, *mæsseprēost* signifies properly only the '*presbyter*', or masspriest. Exceptions are rare or poetic. Cf. under *prēost*, § 104.

§ 156. b) *sē mæssere*, 'He who performs the mass'.

The passages containing this term are as follows:

*mæssere*, '*presbyter*'. Ecg.'s Confess. Th. p. 348, and *ibid.*:

*Ʒif hwā hād forlēose, mæssere oððe bisceop, sȳ hē on hrēowe oð deað*, '*presbyter vel episcopus*'.

*Ʒeah þe sē mæssere synfull sȳ*, '*presbyter*'. Con. Ecgb. 7.

In Wulf., once in composition:

*hēr sȳndan . . . mæsserbanan* (*sācerdbanan*, MS. E). Wulf. 165, 10, MS. I.

Vid. also immediately below.

The naïve, subjective ratiocination of the Middle Ages, which was ever prone to clothe everything, however foreign or strange, in homelike garb, was shared in full measure by the Anglo-Saxons; and no better illustration of it can be found than in the conception of the priests of the Jews as '*mæsseras*' and '*mæsseprēostas*'. The passages in question are not very numerous, though entirely sufficient for our needs.

The Song of Azarias (line 149) furnishes us a very pretty example of this principle; the poet sings of the three young Jewish heroes in the fiery furnace:

*bletsien ðe ðine sācerdas, sōðfæst cyning, mīlde mæsseras*,  
— '*thy gentle masspriests*'.

Characteristic, also, are the following:

*Melchisedec wæs cnyngc and mæsseprēost*. Prud. 5 a. Vid. Bos. Toll.

*ða éaldras and ða mæsseprēostas*, "*seniores et sacerdotes*" (sc. *Judaeorum*) Nicod. 478, 32. Very similar, 478, 35. 482, 32, 27. *et passim* in Nicod.

The remaining examples are taken from the Northumbrian and Mercian gospels:

*ða áldormenn biscopa vel mæsa-prēasta*, '*principes sacerdotum*'. Lind. Mt. 2, 4. Similar: *Ibid.* p. 9, 16. 8, 4. 12, 4, 5. Rush. Mt. 8, 4: *messeprēost*.

§ 157. c) *mæsse-þegn*, i. e. 'mass-thane', from *þegn* (*þēn*), Lat. *minister*.

This designation of the priest is very rare in O.E., occurring only in the legal phrase '*mæsseþegn and woruldþegn*' (mass-thane and secular thane), and was evidently employed only to show the equality before the law of the mass-priest and the thane.

On the position of the *mæsse-prēost* in the Anglo-Saxon state vid. Taranger, pp. 76, 77; Von Amira, in Paul's Grd.<sup>2</sup> III, p. 101. Cf. also Schmidt's 'Glossar' and Bos. Toll, Art. '*mæsse-prēost*'.

My only example is a passage from 'Wergilds' (Th. p. 79; Schmidt's Appen. VII, 2, § 5):

*mæsse-þegnes and woruld þegnes* (sc. *wergild*) *II þūsend þrymsa*.

§ 158. d) *presbyter* (*presbiter*), a learned term, occurs very rarely:

*Hēr Columba presbiter cōm of Scottum*. Chr. A 565 (*Columba mæsseprēost*, E.).

*Presbiter is mæsse-prēost*. Can. Ælfrie 17.

§ 159. e) Ælfrie in a single passage paraphrases '*presbyter*' — perhaps by way explaining the foreign term — with *éald-wita*:

*Presbiter is mæsseprēost oððe éald-wita, nā þæt hē ælc éald sý, ac þæt hē éald sý on wisdōme*. Can. Ælfrie 17.

In Bede the same expression occurs once as the translation of Lat. '*senior*' (144, 11 et seq.):

*cwæð hē* (= *sē mæsseprēost & abbud*) *þæt him sægde sum éald weota* ('*retulisse quendam seniore*'), *þæt hē wære gefulwad æt middum dæge from Paulino þām biscope*.

Whether '*senior*' here is put only for „venerable elder“, or really in the sense of *presbyter* or abbot can not be determined. But it should be noted that '*senior*' in the two last senses, although rare, is nevertheless found early in the Middle Ages. Cf. Du Cange.

§ 160. The office of mass-priest is in O. E. *mæsse-præosthād*, corresponding to Lat. *presbyteratus*:

*Ēalā! feala is þāra þe sācerdhādes on unriht gēornað mæssepræosthādes for gitsuncge woroldgescrīma.* Wulf. 276, 16. Similar: Bede 482, 4, 7. 384, 9.

*mæssepræosthād*, as designation of Jewish priesthood, occurs Defen. 108: *mæssepræosthād, sacerdotium*.

§ 161. As confessor, the priest was known in O. E. as '*sē scrift*'.

The same term was employed to denote likewise both the act of confessing, the confession, and the prescribed penance. In the same connection we have the verb *scrīfan*, to hear confession, Mod. Eng. to *shrive*; cf. the corresponding terms O. H. G. *scriban*, O. S. *scrītan*, O. N. *skrifa*, Mod. Ger. *schreiben*, to write, Lat. *scribere*; also O. Fr. *skrīva*, to write, impose a punishment; O. H. G. *scrift*, O. Fr. *shrift*, '*script*', '*writing*', Mod. Ger. '*Schrift*'; O. N. *skript*, drawing, writing, confession, penance, Mod. Eng. '*shrift*'.

Misled by the wide difference in meaning many scholars have, until a few years ago, desired to adopt for the O. E. O. N. O. N. O. Fr. a supposititious, old Germanic radical *skrüb*, 'to impose punishment'; while the O. H. G. O. S., it was held, was derived directly from the Lat. *scribere*. This view, however, has been entirely refuted by H. Zimmer, Z. f. d. A. 36, 145 et seqq. (1892). According to the latter the entire '*script*'-class finds its origin in Lat. *scribere, scriptum, scripta*.

O. E. *scrīfan* with all of its correspondents were at an early date borrowed from the Latin with the fundamental meaning 'write'. In the same way *scriptum* (pl. *scripta*), a writing, a script, was borrowed, at first in the form \**script* which, however, was soon felt as an abstract noun derived from *scrīfan*, and, consequently, changed into *scrift*. Now, after the conversion of the English tribes to Christianity, *scrift* came to denote the ordinances of penance prescribed by the Church of England — '*scripta*' — so called because they were recorded or inscribed in a so-called '*confessionale*' (*scrift-bōc*). Later on, this meaning of *scrift* — ordinance of penance, then

penance — was transferred to the penance-imposer, the confessor; and, at the same time, the verb *scrifan* became influenced by *script*, and adopted the meanings 'to hear confession', 'to impose punishment or penance'.

Wherever in the other languages the verb occurs with the latter senses, the influence of the English Church is to be recognized. For further details see Zimmer in the above mentioned article.

### § 162. Examples.

*hē þonne óndette ælce costnunge, ðe him on becume, ðām mōde his scriftes, „menti pastoris“.* Past. 105, 16.

*swā him his scrift tæce.* Hom. II, 94, 9.

etc. etc.

*Cf. forðām ā man sceal þām unstrárgan men for Godes lufe and ege lǫðlicor dēman and scrifon þonne þām strárgan,* Lat. 'judicari'. Cn. II, 68, § 1.

For *script* = confession cf.:

*gā man tō scrifte, 'one should go to confession'.* Æthel. VII, Anhang § 2.

*zif preost scriftes forwynne, 'if a priest refuse confession'.* Anhang II, 8. etc. etc.

A few passages are found in which confession is called more fully *script-spræc* str. f., from *spræc*, 'speech':

*Zif deaðscýldig man scriftspræce zýrne, 'if a condemned man desire confession'.* Edw. and Gūð. 5 Pref., Cn. II, 44.

For further examples of *script* and *scrifan* see Bos. Toll.

Some examples of *script-bōc*, Lat. 'confessionale' (cf. above):

*þā mæsse-preostas . . . sceolan heora scrift-bēc mid rihte tæcan and læran.* Bl. 43.

*swā hwylc man swā þās scrift-bōc tilize tō ābreccanne . . hē sý forðmed, „ . . Confessionale hoc“.* Poen. Ecgb. Th. p. 392, 35. Also: Chart. Th. 430, 20 (vid. Bos. Toll.). Wulf. 242, 22.

§ 163. The parish, the precinct of the priest as confessor, is *sēo scriptscīr*, — from *script* and *scīr* „shire“, or district:

*zif hē on his scrift-scīre ænigne man wite ȝode oferhýre.* Edg.'s Can. Th. p. 395.



*Sacerd scel on his scriftscire wislice and wærlice lædan and læran þā godcūnde héorde þē hē héaldan scel.* Wulf. 275, 15.

Etc.

In addition to *scriftscir*, *preostscir* and *hýrnes*, 'parochia', — from *gehýran* (cf. Ger. *gehören*), obey, belong to, — were used: *nē spāne nān mæsse-prēost nānne mon of ððre cyrcean hýrnesse tō his cyrcan, nē of ððre prēost-scýre lære ðæt mon his cyrcan gesēce.* Eccl. Inst. XIV. Jh.

Compare the above with the explanation given under *hīeremon*, § 55.

§ 164. As chaplain we find the priest designated by the compounds *hánd-prēost*, or *hired-prēost*, i. e. the „hand-priest“ or assistant, and the „family priest“ — *hired* denoting family — corresponding to the ecclesiastical Lat. „*presbyter domesticus*“, „*sacerdos domesticus*“ (vid. Du Cange).

For *hánd-prēost*, cf. such compounds as O. E. *hánd-gesella*, partner, comrade; *hánd-þegn*, assistant; and others.

#### Examples.

*Stigand ðē was þes cinges rædgifa and his hándprēst.* Chron. F, anno 1051.

*þrēngde hē his hándprēostas and eac sūme of his tūm-prēostan,* „*capellānis, clericis suis*“. Chron. F, 870. Plummer p. 284 (above).

*sacellanus, hándprēost.* Ælfric. Wr. W. 155, 28.

*On Brunas gewitnesse mæsse prēostas and . . . on ealra þæra hýred prēosta.* Cart. Sax. No. 248. Similar: Nos. 1249, 1252, &c.

§ 165. The foreign term *capellān* (< Lat. *capellanus*) was introduced in the closing years of the O. E. period.

In a genuine document dating about A. D. 1075 and concerning the benefactions of Bishop Leofric of Exeter to his cathedral, we read, —

*hē [= sē bisceop] ann his capellāne ('capellā' MS.) þider binnan forð mid him silfum on eallum ðām ðingum þē hē silf dide mid Godes ðēninge.* Earle, Land Ch. p. 251.

The earliest M. E. likewise points to the existence in Late O. E. of this term. Cf., for example, Chron. E, anno 1099:

*sē cýng Willelm . . . Ranulfe his capellāne þæt biscoþrice on Dūnholme ȝeaf.*

#### 8. The Deacon.

§ 166. The O. E. employs here *diacon* (rarely, and in late texts, *deacon*), taken bodily from the Lat.-Gr. *diaconus*.

The „*diacon*“ was originally a term denoting ‘servant’ generally; in the language of the Church it signifies the Levite of the Old Testament and Engl. ‘deacon’.

#### Forms.

The form *deacon* occurs in the following passages: *Aaron ðin brōður deacon*, „*frater tuus Levites*“. Exod. Gr. 4, 14. *æȝðær ȝe deacon ȝe subdiacon*. Ben. R. 141, 3 (F). Vid. also Nicod. (B) 481, 21. 483, 31.

The form *diacon* is found Wulf. 216. 7.

§ 167. Note. In addition to the usual *diacon*, the native vocable *þegn* was, perhaps, likewise employed, — in imitation of the Latin ‘minister’. On the use of ‘minister’ for deacon in Lat. vid. Du Cange.

In the following passages *þegn* may, perhaps, denote ‘deacon’, although always in translation of the Lat. ‘minister’:

*dum ea missa agitur, sequentis missę ministri se induant*, „*þære æftran mæssan þenas*“. De C. M. 388, 9. Similar, 389, 10, and elsewhere in this work. Cf.: *Diaconus is ȝecweden þegn sē þe þenað þām mæssepreoste*. Ælfric’s Past. 34.

§ 168. The O. E. rendition of *archidiaconus* was either *ercediacon*, or more rarely the anglicized form *hēahdiacon*.

#### Examples.

*Diaconus is ȝecweden þegn sē þe þenað þām mæssepreoste*. Ælfric’s Past. 34.

*Diacones feoh VI ȝýlde*. Æthelbirht 1.

*wē nū ȝehýrdon of ðæs diacones mūðe*. Hom. I, 152, 3.

*Ðā apostolas ȝehādodon seofon diaconas*. Hom. I, 44, 10.

*Aaron þin brōður, deacon*, „*Aaron, frater tuus, Levites*“. Exod. Gr. 4, 14.

For *diacon* as „*Levites*“, „*Levita*“, cf. furthermore Jo. 1, 19:

*sacerdotes et levitas*, „*hyra sācerdas and hyra dīaconas*“. Also Lk. 10, 32: *levita*, *sē dīacon*. Etc. Nicod. 478, 32 &c.

This latter use of *dīacon* is, however, not confined to O. E.: even the Gr.-Lat. *diaconus* serves as the usual translation of „*Levita*“ (vid. Du Cange, art. „*diaconus*“).

§ 169. The rank or dignity of deacon, „*diaconatus*“, is O. E. *dīaconhād* (Hom. II, 120, 13; etc.), while his official activity was more exactly denoted by *dīacon-þegnung*, „*diaconatus officium*“: Bede 272, 17.

Examples of O. E. *ercediacon*, *hēahdīacon*:

*archidiaconus*, *arcediacon*. Ælfrie, Wr. W. 155, 33.

*erce-dīacon*. Hom. I, 416, 29. 418, 16.

*hēahdīaconas*. Blick. Hom. 109, 24 (sole example).

*arcediacon*. North. Priestergesetz 6. 7., Schmidt.

The learned form „*archidīacon*“ is found but once; viz. Bede 454, 22:

*Becōm hē (= Benedictus) tō frēondscipe ðæs hālgan weres and ðæs zelæredestan, Bonifatius archidiacones.*

§ 170. 9. The lowest rank of the ecclesiastical „*ordines majores*“ was that of the sub-deacon.

He appears in O. E. as *subdīacon*, rarely (but perhaps more frequently so designated by the common people?) as *underdīacon*:

*ðā gehādode sē pāpa Tranquillinum tō prēoste, his twægen suna tō dīaconum, and ðā oðre tō subdīaconum*. Lives V, 348.

*subdīaconum* (dat. pl.). Blick. Hom. 109.

*ic Cwolvulf subdīacon*. Cart. Sax. 412 (anno 833).

Vid. also: Reg. Con. Zup. 212. Con. Eegb. Th. p. 361 (2×). Poen. Eegb. II, 1, 24, 25. Can. Edg. Mod. Imp. 7.

*Subdiaconus is sōðlice underdīacon sē ðe ðā fatu byrð forð tō þām dīacone*. Ælfrie's Canons, Th. p. 443.

*subdiaconus, underdīacon*. Ælfrie, Wr. W. 155, 32, also ibid. 308, 4. D. Rit. 194, 1 et seq.

Before passing on, it must be noted that in one monument of O. E., the De C. M., the sub-deacon is consistently called the reader, the „epistle reader“ — *pistol-rædere* — referring

to the chief duty of the sub-deacon (cf. in this connection Reg. Con. Zup. 212: *sē subdiacon gestīze þone rædingcscamel*): *subdiaconi, pistel ræderas*. De C. M. 418, 7, 14. Also *ibid.* 406, 2, 5. 417, 5. 424, 5.

§ 171. 10. The list of the ecclesiastical „*ordines minores*“ is opened by the acolyte, or especial assistant of the priest in the church service (Lat. *acolithus*, Gr. ἀκόλουθος, „a follower“, or servant).

In O. E. the Lat. word is adopted as ‘*sē acolitus*’; or the term is paraphrased 1) as *hūsl-þegn*, i. e. „assistant at communion“, from *hūsl*, the Host;<sup>1)</sup> 2) as *tapor-berend*, i. e. Lat. *ceroferarius*, light-bearer. For ‘*tapor*’ from „*papyrus*“ vid. Kluge’s Wörterbuch; 3) as *wæx-berend* = ‘*ceroferarius*’, a more literal rendering (*cera* = *wax*).

The two last mentioned terms are of rare occurrence and are from interlinear versions:

*accolitus cum pulvillo sequatur*, „*taporberend mid pyle folgize*“. De C. M. 418, 11.

*duobus accolitis*, „*twām taporberendum*“ (-*bernendum* MS.). *Ibid.* 424, 4.

*accolithus g. cerarius ad recitandum evangelium*, „*accolithus (acculu’* Ms.) *on crēcisc (crec’* MS.) *wæxbiorende*“. D. Rit. 195, 9.

§ 172. The office of acolyte is described as follows:

*Acolitus is gecweden sē ðe cāndeले oððe tapor byrð to ȝodes þenungum, ðonne mann godspell ræt, oððe ðonne man hālgad ðæt hūsl æt ðām wēofode*. Ælfrie’s Canons. Th. p. 443.

*nē sceal nān acolitus, ðæt is hūsl-þēn, forsecgan nānne subdiacon . . . and nelle wē nā ðæt man gewægnize subdiacon nē hūsl-þēn*. Ecg.’s Confess. Th. p. 361.

§ 173. 11) The Lat. „*exorcista*“, the exorcist, is unchanged in O. E.: ‘*sē exorcista*’.

At the same time, however, we find in the same sense the interesting native terms *hālsere* (O. H. G. *heilisari*, „*aruspex*“), or *hālsigend*; respectively *hælsere*, *hælsigend*, employed, on the origin and fundamental meaning of which vid. § 79 n.

<sup>1)</sup> Apparently formed on the analogy of such compounds as *wēofod-þegn*, etc.; for I have been unable to find a church-Lat. „*minister eucharistiae*“.

We should note likewise the derivative substantives *hālsung*, 'supplication', 'exorcism', 'angury', and the verb *hālsian*, 'conjure', 'supplicate'.

### Examples.

*exorcista is on Englisc sē ðe mid āðe hālsað („conjures“)*  
*ða āwyrgeðan ġāstas ðe willað menn dreccan.* Ælfrie's Canons.  
Th. p. 443.

*exorcista, hālsere.* Ecg.'s Confess. Th. p. 361.

*Exorcista is hālsigend sē ðe ræt ofer ðā wit-seocan men,*  
*and ðā untruman.* Ælfrie's Past. Th. p. 458 (sole example).

*Aruspicum . . hælsera.* Wr. W. 342, 40.

*Augur, hælsera* (8<sup>th</sup> Cent.). Wr. W. 8, 5.

&c.

*Ic hālsige and bidde þone gelæredan.* Prologue to Gū.

*Ic hālsige ðe þurh þone lifiendan God, „adjuro te“.* Mt.  
26, 63.

Etc.

*ecclesiastico exorcismo, „on circlicere hālsunge“* (Gloss:  
*adjuratione, obsecratione, benedictione*). Bout. Ald. to Giles p. 57.<sup>1)</sup>  
Cf. Bos. Toll. for many further examples.

Lat. *oratio* = *hālsung* occurs, so far as I know, only Bede  
186, 17:

*sē mæsseprēost orationem rædde,* „the priest read an  
exorcism“.

§ 174. 12. Lat. „*lector*“, the reader, is rendered literally  
by *rædere*.

The vb. *rædan* signifies to advise, to take counsel, as well  
as to read, and is inflected both strong (past *rēorað*) and weak  
(past *rædde*):

*Lector is rædere ðe ræð on ġodes cyrcan.* Ælfrie's Canons.  
Th. p. 443.

[*nē sceal*] *nān duru-wérd nānne rædere [forsecgan].* Con.  
Ecg. Th. p. 361.

Etc.

The following passage contains the feminine form:

*sēo rædestre and þā þeningmen gān on forewéardum mid*  
*taporum.* Reg. Con. Zup. Cf. also Bos. Toll.

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Napier, Old Engl. Gloss. 4083.]

§ 175. 13. The „*ostiarius*“, or doorkeeper, was known in O. E. as the ‘door-ward’, *sē duru-wéard*:

*Ostiarius* is *duru-wéard sē ðe cirican cægan healt*. Ælfric’s Past. Th. p. 458.

Similarly in Ælfric’s Can. Th. p. 443.

*ne sceal nān acolitus . . forsecgan nānne subdiacon, . . nē nān duru-wérd nānne rædere mid nānre wrohte . . , „non licet ostiario . . “.* Ecg.’s Confess. Th. p. 361. Cf. also Bos. Toll.

§ 176. 14. The office of sexton did not form an independent ecclesiastical order, but was administered either by the ‘presbyter’ or by some other cleric (vid. Du Cange, „*Custos*“).

The sexton was denominated in O. E., in accord with the general character of his office, *sē ciric-wéard*, i. e. „church-ward“ or guardian of the church:

*ðā eode sē bisceop into þære ððre cyrcan . . and befrān ðone cyrc-wéard hwær þæs hālgan wæpnu wæron*. Hom. I, 452.

*þā sæde sē cnapa þām cyrcwérde þæt*. Lives XXI, 163.

*Æðelstān, cyric wýrd, feng tō þām abbodrice æt Abbandūne*. Chron. (C), Anno 1044.

Etc., etc.

§ 177. In conclusion, the names of those ecclesiastical officials who conducted the singing during divine service must be mentioned; I refer to the „*cantores*“ and their leader, the „*archicantator*“, in O. E. „*ðā sōngeras*“ and „*sē hēahsōngere*“ (rarely *sē cantor*, *cantere*, from the Lat.), from „*sōngere*“, a singer:

*būton Iacobe ðæm sōngere*. Bede 258, 27.

*sē bisceop dā ðær gesette gōde sāngeras and mæssepreostas and manigféaldlice ciricean þegnas*. Blick. Hom. 207, 31.

*nū sceole wē hēaldan urne palm, oþ ðæt sē sāngere onginne ðone offring-sāng*. Hom. I, 218.

Similar: Ibid. I, 508. De C. M. 409, 7. Reg. Con. Zup. 26.

*sē ārwyrða wer Iohannes, Sce Petres cirican ðæs apostolis hēahsōngere*. Bede 314, 2 (only example of *hēah-sōngere*).

For *sāngere* = poet, vid. Bos. Toll.

*Cantere* and *cantor* occur but once each:

*a cantore ilico inchoetur antephona, „fram cantore“.* De C.M. 428, 12.

*onginne se cantor 'alleluia' . . and ðone sealm þærtō.* Ælfric's Can. 36.

## The Transition to Monastic Clergy.

### The Canons.

§ 178. The canons occupy a sort of intermediate position between the clergy proper and the monastic clergy, since they lived, on the one hand, according to a special Rule (*'Canonici regulares'*), or according to the canons of the Church (*'Canonici seculares'*); while, on the other hand, they were at the same time subject to the oversight and discipline of the bishop, and carried on the work of their ministry at his cathedral.

The canon is called in O. E. usually *se cānōnic*, although quite often the general term *prēost* is applied to this office; cf. *prēost* d) § 107.<sup>1)</sup>

§ 179. On the part of the female clericals, the *„sanctimoniales“*, O. E. *ðā nunnan* (Mod. Eng. *nuns*), corresponded to the canons; for they, too, conformed to canonical rules, and consequently did not properly speaking coincide with the *„monachae“* or 'female monks'. These latter the Anglo-Saxons called, after Lat. *monacha*, *myneceana* (Cf. Germ. *Mönchinnen*), sing. *seo mynecenu*; cf. § 201.

The fact, however, should be noted that the official distinction between the *„monacha“* and the *„sanctimonialis“* was strictly observed neither in Lat. nor in O. E. Thus e. g. Bede 340, 1 et seq.:

*wæs in þēm seolfan mynstre sumu hāligu nunne þære noma wæs Begu seo wæs Drihtne gehālgad in clænum mægðhāde mā þonne þritig wintra; and heo þær in munuchāde Drihtne þeowade.*

<sup>1)</sup> The later form *„canon“* is not found in genuine O. E. texts, although it occurs in early 12<sup>th</sup> Century Transition Engl. Cf. *Lēowine se canon*. Earle, Land Ch. p. 261 (about A. D. 1135).

The earliest instance of the use of the word in Eng., as given by the Oxf. Dict., is from Layamon (1205).

On the derivation of O. E. *nunne* from Lat. *nonna* through the Romance, vid. Pogatscher, § 167.

Note. For the difference between nuns and female monks, the reader is referred to the excellent article in Schmidt's „Glossar“.

One slight error, however, occurs there that, I think, deserves notice.

The assertion (Art. 'mynece') that in attacks against their chastity always nuns, never female monks, are referred to („immer nur von Nonnen, nicht von Mönchinnen“), is not quite true; as will be clear from the following passages:

„*Ȝif hwā hæme wið mynecyne, Si quis fornicatus fuerit cum monacha.*“ Poen. Ecgb. IV, 9. Vid. also *ibid.* IV, 10 (very similar); IV; and III, 11.

These passages, it is true, make allusion only to sexual intercourse, not to violation by force; but, nevertheless, they make it clear that, in spite of their advanced age (at least sixty years, according to Schmidt!), the chastity even of the „mynece“ or female monks had to be looked after, — a fact that Schmidt apparently denies.

### § 180. Examples.

*Ȝodes þēowas: biscopas and abbodas, munecas and mynecena, cānōnicas and nunnan.* Æthelr. VI, 2. Similar: *ibid.* V, 4:

*Ȝodes þēowas: biscopas and abbudas, munecas and mynecena, prēostas and nunnan (prēostas = here cānōnicas; vid. § 107).*

*nā þæt ān be munecum ānum is þis tō hēaldenne, ac eac swylce be ārwyrdum cānōnicum.* Ben. R. 111, 6.

*canonico more, „æfter cānōnica þēawe“.* Reg. Con. Zup. 87, 106.

*nāðer nē bisceop nē mōsseprēost, ne ðacon ne nān riht cānōnicus [riht cānōnicus, i. e. „canonicus regularis“].* Ælfric's Can. Th. p. 442. And „*þā cānōnicas*“. Earle, Land-Chart. p. 264 (4 times).

*And cānōnicas . . . ðæt hȳ beoddern and slæpern habban magan.* Æthelr. V, 7.

As an adjective, *cānōnic* is found but once = Lat. *canonicus*, -a, -um:

*sē ðe tōbreceð ðā cānōnican gesetnysse.* Hom. II, 96.

The same is true of *cānōneclīc*, „*canonicus*“:

*Æfter cānōneclīcan gewunan.* Canon. Hrs. 359, 8 (Bos. Toll.). *femina sanctimonialis*, „*sum æðele nunne*“. Bede, 288, 26.

Etc., etc.



§ 181. O. E. *nunne* serves, furthermore, in literature as translation of the Lat. „*virgo vestalis*“; thus Oros 162, 31:

*Caperronie wæs hātenu heora goda nunne*, „*Caparomia, virgo vestalis*“. Similar to this is also the passage *ibid.* 108, 16.

Cf. similar developments in the case of *diacon*, *biscop*, etc.; and note the explanations given in § 156.

## The Monastic Clergy.

### Evolution from Hermit-life.

§ 182. Monasticism owes its origin and existence to no sudden religious movement, but is the result of a gradual development. Its germ must be sought in the oriental hermit-life of the fourth century.

At this time the cessation of persecutions had dealt the death-blow to the stern discipline of the early Christians. Men were becoming enervated and effeminate. The old ideals — the Cross and the Crown — were neglected. Zeal had grown cold.

Yet, in the midst of all this falling away and decay, there were not wanting pious souls to bemoan the loss of ancient virtues; and to many it seemed that a solitary life of self-denial far removed from the rush and turmoil of the world might afford the only means of appeasing the wrath of an angry deity.

Such was the origin of hermit-life, of whose further history, however, as well as that of monasticism nothing additional need here be said. I shall merely refer the reader to the exhaustive review of the subject contained in the „*Encyclopaedia Britannica*“, art. „*Monachism*“.

### The Hermit.

Lat. „*eremita*“, „*anachoreta*“, are rendered in O. E. by the following expressions:

§ 183. 1. *āncor*, *āncer*, *āncora*, *āncra*, — found mostly in compounds: *āncor-*, *āncer-* — and sometimes with short initial vowel: *oncra*.

Of the O. E. translations of „*eremita*“ this is the most usual.

The most notable feature of *āncor* is the length of the *a*; for we should expect only the forms *ancor* or *oncor* — i. e. with a short vowel.

But, if we compare *āncor* with the corresponding O. H. G. and O. S. representatives of Lat. „*anachoreta*“, the phenomenon at once becomes explicable; these are found to be *einchorano* and *ēnkoro*, respectively.

A comparison of the three prefixes demonstrates clearly that in the forms *āncor*, *einchorano*, and *ēnkoro* we have no phonologically correct representations of the Latin prototype, but forms considerably modified by popular misconceptions. For the history of this modification we must turn to the English form, of which the O. H. G. and O. S. are but adaptations.

As we see by the North. *sē oncra*, the first syllable of O. E. *āncor* was originally short; but being popularly associated with the native numeral prefix *ān*-, ‘one’, ‘alone’ (as in *ān-būend*, *ān-gēnga*, etc.), it became lengthened, and *ancor* was conceived of as *ān-cor*, ‘one dwelling alone’ i. e. a hermit.

Of course, *āncor* and its allied forms *einchorano*, *ēnkoro*, cannot be considered as Common West-Germ. borrowings, since popular confusion of the first syllable of *anachoreta* with Germanic *ain*- would be possible only in O. E., where *ain*- becomes *ān*. Subsequently, the Anglo-Saxon missionaries adapted *āncor* to the O. H. G. and O. S. as *einchorano* and *ēnkoro*.

Note 1. The length of the *a* in *āncor*, *āncra* is testified beyond a doubt by Bede, who writes: *aancoran*. 100, 20. *adāncorstōwe*. 424, 12. *āncerlifes*. 364, 30. *āncorliif*. 412, 18.

An additional evidence is the almost total absence in the oldest monuments of the form *oncra*, which we naturally expect in early O. E. The only example known to me is from Lind. Jo. p. 188, 4; Cart. Sax. No. 631: *billfrīd sē oncræ*.

Vid. in conclusion Pogatscher's deduction of *āncra* from the M. E. *āncre* of the Anceren Riwle; Eng. Stud. XXVII, p. 220.

Note 2. In a recent article (Engl. Stud. Vol. XXVII, p. 220 et seq.), Pogatscher expresses the conviction that *āncor* etc. is not a popular, but a learned borrowing. This he concludes from the fact that in the Romance languages there is no trace of a popular development of *anachoreta*; and he finds in the long *a* of *āncra* additional support for his theory. The O. E. confusion with *ān*, one, he very skillfully explains as „erst eine Folge der in gelehrten Entlehnungen gewöhnlichen Dehnung“.

The cogency of this argument is to be immediately admitted; however, there are two considerations which would seem to throw much doubt upon its validity. In the first place, the theory of Pogatscher fails to account for the short form *ancra*, *oncra*.

And secondly, the remarkable contraction of *anachoreta* > *āncra*, *āncor* points to a popular, and not a learned source. This latter difficulty Pogatscher himself admits. I think, also, that his argument is hardly strengthened by the citation of the 11<sup>th</sup> Century ἄναξ λεγόμενον *anacorsetl* (Wr. W.).

### Examples.

*pā cwōmon hēo ærest tō sumum aancoran*, „*ad quendam virum sanctum . . . qui anachoreticam ducere vitam solebat*“. Bede 100, 20.

*āncorlīf*, „Hermit-life“. Bede 218, 8.

*āncerlīf*. Bede 364, 30. Hom. II, 142, 146; etc. in composition. *anachoreta*, *ancra*. Ælfrie, Wr. W. 155, 35. 308, 8.

*Levitonarium*, „*slēflēas āncra scrūd*“. Ælfrie, Wr. W. 151, 36.

Etc., etc.

The form *āncer* is from Wulfstan:

*deōfol dām āncre sēde*. 214, 21. *ān hālig āncer*. 214, 23. *dām āncre*. 214, 25.

§ 184. 2. *ān-setla*, Ger. *Einsiedler*.

So Ben. R. 134, 22. 135, 3; etc.

This form, as well as 4), are evidently direct imitations of Gr.-Lat. *ana-choreta*, Lat. *solitarius*.

§ 185. 3. The mixed form *āncer-setla*, wm., probably only a secondary development from *āncer-setl* n., „hermitage“:

*āncersetlena drohtnung*, „the life of hermits“. Hom. I, 544, 26 and *ibid.* 546, 1.

*anachoreseos* (gloss „heremi“), *ancersetlan*. Bout. Ald. Giles p. 35.<sup>1)</sup>

§ 186. 4. *ān-būend*, „dwelling alone“, poetical, and found only once; viz., in the gen. plur. *ān-būendra*, used as a designation of pious eremites, Gū. 59.

§ 187. 5. *wēsten-setla*, wm., a literal translation of „*eremita*“ („*eremus*“ = O. E. *wēsten*, a desert):

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Napier, Old Engl. Gloss. 2517. 3638.]

*Eremita, wēstensetla.* Ælfrie, Wr. W. 155, 34.

Another form of the word is *wēsten-seda*, which is apparently a scribal error for *wēsten-sedla*:

„*eremita* (gl. *anachoreta*). *wēstenseda*“. Bout. Ald. gloss to Giles p. 34: „*Joannem . . heremitam*“.<sup>1)</sup>

Both of these forms occur but once and in a gloss; so that we may, perhaps, consider them only as explanatory renderings, and not as the customary O. E. equivalents of the Latin.

§ 188. The dwelling-place of the hermit, his hermitage, was called in O. E., —

*āncor-setl* n. (*āncer-*), Hom. II, 152, 4, etc. (*setl* = ‘*sedes*’).

*āncor-stōw* f., from *stōw*, place, ‘*sedes*’:

*in dýgle adāncorstōwe.* Bede 424, 12.

*ān-setl* n., ‘solitary abode’, ‘hermitage’:

*ānsetles wunung*, „*solitarii sedere desiderant*“. Ben. R. 135, 9 (F).

The compound *āncor-līf* was employed to designate the lonely life of the hermit, ‘*anachoretica vita*’:

*tō āncorlīfe*, „*ad eremiticam vitam*“. Bede 218, 11.

*āncerlīf.* Ibid. 364, 30, etc.; similarly, Hom. II, 142, 146.

### The Abbot.

§ 189. Lat. *abbas*, *abbatis*, appears in O. E. as *abbod*, *abbud* (*abbad*), and the rare, and certainly very late, weak form *abboda*, -an. Cf. O. H. G. *abbat*, O. N. *abote*, *abbate*.<sup>2)</sup>

<sup>1)</sup> [Cp. Napier, Old Engl. Gloss. 2503 *heremitam*, i. *anachoretam*, *wēstensetla*.]

<sup>2)</sup> The form with *t* — *abbot* — in M. E. quite common, is not exemplified for O. E. with absolute certainty. True, Ben. R. Log. (MS. dating from the beginning of the 11<sup>th</sup> Cent.) 100, 16 reads: *ðām abbote*, „*abbati*“; so also ibid. 103, 6. 110, 1, 6. But these isolated cases can easily have originated from the careless pen of the very disreputable copyist of this MS.; for, as Logeman shows, he was frequently misled in other cases by the Latin words of the gloss. Cf. Log. The only other example of *abbot* I have been able to find in O. E. occurs in a genuine document of the year 1035: *Cnut cýngc grēt . . . Ælfstān abbod.* Earle, Land Ch. p. 237; *abbot* Cod. Dipl. No. 1325.

Whether this example is to be ascribed to a mere scribal blunder, or considered as genuine, cannot, of course, be determined.

As the medial *d* in *abbud* shows, the O. E. term was not taken directly from the Latin, but from a Romance source; see the Oxf. Dict., art. 'abbot', and Pogatscher, §§ 74, 184, 292, 311, 319, 373.

It is scarcely necessary to give examples of *abbod*, *abbud*, as the word occurs so frequently (see the O. E. dictionaries); this will, of course, not hold good for the rare weak form '*abboda*', examples of which occur only in quite late MSS. Kemble's Cod. Dipl. No. 922 (probably from the close of the 11<sup>th</sup> century) contains the only example of this form known to the writer:

*ic eode tō mīnen abboden Ælfwine* (twice).

Note 1. Elsewhere in this monument the strong form *abbod* is frequently used.

Note 2. In the dictionary of Bos. Toll., the following sentence from Inst. Pol. Th. p. 430 is cited as the only instance of the weak form: *swā gebireð abbodan*, „as be seems an abbot“. Of course this is an error, since this late plural ending of the dative *-an* is quite usual in both strong and weak nouns; cf. Sievers Gram.<sup>2,3</sup> § 237, Anm. 6; § 293, Anm.

In making this correction I, of course, intend no reflection against so able a scholar as Prof. Toller; for, as I hear, he did not revise the first part of the old Bosworth at all.

§ 190. In the Ben. R., and elsewhere rarely, the abbot is quite often known as *sē éaldor* (not to be confused with *éaldor*, the dean of a monastery, mentioned below!) „the Elder“, as translation of Lat. *prior* (i. e. the '*prior conventualis*', M. E. and Mod. E. '*prior*'):

*prior*, *sē éaldor*. Ben. R. Log. 70, 3 = *sē éalder*, Ben. R. *in arbitrio prioris*, „on dōme éaldres“. Ben. R. Log. 72, 8 = *on þæs abbodes dōme*. Ben. R., etc.

*ðām munece ðe hē tō éaldre geset hæfde ofer þām mynstre . . . ðā hī āwōcon*, *sē éaldor* and his *prōfost*, „*Patrem . . . atque ejus proposito*“. Hom. II, 172. Similarly, *ibid.* I, 318. De C. M. 439, 17.

*priore abeunte . . . subsequens abbas sapienter disponat*, „*ýldran gewitendum*, *sē æftra abbud*“. De C. M. 448, 7 et seqq.

§ 191. The abbot as archimandrite, or general abbot of a considerable number of monks, occurs only once in O. E.; cf. Bout. Ald. gloss to Giles p. 51:

*archimandrita*, *hēhfæder vel lāreow*: in Giles:<sup>1)</sup> „*quingen-  
torum circiter monachorum archimandrita*“.

On the position of the archimandrite in the church, cf. Du Cange.

§ 192. From *abbod* and *éaldor* are derived, analogous to the other offices, the terms signifyng dignity, office, of abbot, ‘*abbatia*’, ‘*abbatis dignitas*’; viz.:

*abbod-rīce* (Chron. C, anno 1044, &c. &c.).

This term was quite probably used, also, of a convent of nuns in late O. E. cf. Chron. E, 963: *Hē macode þær twā abbot rīce, ān of muneca, oðer of nunna*, „He created there two abbasies, one of monks, the other of nuns“.

*abbod-hād*: *Munuc-hād and abbud-had sýndon on oðre wisan*. Ælfric’s Can. Th. p. 444.

*abbod-dōm*: ‘*Cūðfrið sē aarwýrða Chrīstes ðeow and mæsse-  
preost, sē . . . in onwālde abbuddoomes fore wæs*. Bede 384, 15; etc.

*éaldor-scipe* — otherwise in the sense of ‘*principatus*’, ‘*auctoritas*’, in general —

*abbod . . . sceal . . . . þæs éaldorscipes noman mid dædum  
gefyllan*. Ben. R. 10, 10.

§ 193. The prioress, Lat. *abbatissa*, is in O. E. *sēo abbudisse*, the fem. form. of *abbud*. Cf. O. N. *abbadis*, M. L. G. *abbadis*.

Parallel forms are: *abbadis*, *abbodisse*, *abbodysse*, *abbadysse*, *abbuddysse*, *abbudesse*, *abbodesse*, *abedisse*, *abbedesse*, *abbutisse*.

Note. Passages showing *t*-forms are: *abbudas* and *abbutissan*. De C. M. 368, 3. *abbutissena*, *abbatissarum*.

In view of what has been previously demonstrated (§ 189, foot-note), these *t*-forms may well be the result of mere confusion of letters due to careless copying.

#### A few examples.

*hēo buu wæron abbudissan in Briȝe þām mynstre*. Bede 172, 22.

*ðā hēo abbudesse wæs*. Bede 176, 3.

*ðære abbudessan*. Ibid. 176, 20. *ðære abbuddyssan*. Ibid. 176, 13.

*abbadis*. Cart. Sax. No. 1304.

<sup>1)</sup> Cp. Napier, Old Engl. Gloss. 3720 *archimandrita*, .i. *princeps ouium*, *hēhfæder, lāreow*.]

*Hild abbodesse.* Chron. A, anno 680; Similar, Chron. C, 982.  
*tō ðā abbedessan on Lēo mynstre.* Chron. C, 1046.

*betwimon Eadgyfe abbodesse and Lēofrice abbode.* Cart. Sax.  
 No. 1244.

§ 194. The conception of the prioress as the spiritual mother (*sēo mōdor*) and the abbot as father (*fæder*) was in O. E. a favorite one. Both these expressions, however, did not originate on English soil, but had long before existed in ecclesiastical Latin as '*pater monasterii*', '*mater monasterii*', respectively.

#### Examples.

*Benedictus sē abbud ealra muneca fæder.* Chron. F, anno 509.  
*abbas, abbod, oððe fæder.* Wr. W. 307, 43.

*þēm þe hý fæder nemnað, þæt is þēm abbode, „in quem patrem vocant“.* Ben. R. 137, 24 (F).

*patres monasteriorum matresque, „fæderas mynstra and moddra“.* De C. M. 373, 9.

*sēo ārfæste mōdor ȝode þære lēofan gesomnunge, Æðelburg abbudisse.* Bede 286, 28; Similarly, Ibid. 288, 2. 290, 27.

Etc., etc.

§ 195. Next after the abbacy, the most important conventual office was that of provost, Latin '*praepositus*', '*praelatus*'.

Here, again, we encounter both a native and a borrowed term in the O. E., the latter being in two forms; viz., *prāfast* (*prāfast*, *prāvost*) derived, as its form shows, through the Romance from Lat. *praepositus*, and *prōfost* (*prōfast*), in like manner derived from Lat. *propositus*.

Pogatscher (§ 108) observes: „die rein volkstümliche Form des Wortes [i. e. *prāfast*] deutet auf Vorhandensein in vorchristlicher Zeit hin“.

This view is strengthened by the fact that *prāfost* is used not only in a religious but, at times, also in a purely worldly sense, and translates Lat. *praefectus* (O. E. *ȝerēfa*). The passages showing this meaning are:

*þā cōmun Israēla folces prāfostas, „venerunt praepositi filiorum Israel et vociferati sunt ad Pharonem“.* Exod. Gr. 5, 15. Very similar, Ibid. 5, 19.

*Valerianus Decies prāfest ðæs cāseres.* Shrine 117, 12.  
*Valerianus sē prāvost.* 117, 16 (Bos. Toll.).

*prepositus, gerefa oððe prāfost.* Wr. W. 309, 33.

The native term referred to above in the paraphrase *regol-wéard*, „guardian of the Rule“, „provost“, in reference to the disciplinary duties of that officer, from „*regol*“, the Benedictine Rule. On the history of O.E. *regol* < Lat. *regula* (dating probably from the continental period of O.E.), vid. Pogatscher § 103.

Examples of *regol-wéard* and of *prāfost* in the ecclesiastical sense:

*þæs mynstres prōfost and regolwéard wæs in ðā tid Boisel. . . . After ðon . . . wæs Cūðberht ðæs ilcan mynstres regolwéard gewórden: „cui tempore illo praepositus Boisel fuit. . . . Postquam Cudberct eidem monasterio factus est praepositus“.* Bede 360, 32.

*þurh hādunge prāfostes, „per ordinationem prepositi“.* Ben. R. Log. 109, 12.

*sē éaldor and his prōfost, „the abbot and his provost“.* Hom. II, 172, 18.

Vid Bos. Toll. for further illustrations.

§ 196. The office of provost, „*praepositura*“, is denoted either by *prāfost-folgoð m.*, from *folgoð* ‘following’, ‘retinue’; whence the sense ‘service’, ‘office’, — or by *prāfost-scīr f.*, from *scīr* ‘*provincia*’, ‘*officium*’:

*hē sý āworpen of þām prāfostfolgope, „deiciatur de ordine praepositurae“.* Ben. R. 126, 5. = Ben. R. Log. *prāvost-scīr*.

The Dean.

§ 197. By the Lat. *decanus* is denoted, according to Du Cange, „*in monasterio qui decem monachis, seu Decaniae monachorum praeerat*“.

‘*Decanus*’ corresponds precisely to O.E. *teoðing-éaldor*, „*Tithing-Elder*“, a term which, originally, must have been applied to the officer who presided over a secular Tenth (according to an institution of the A.-S. state), ‘*decanus*’, —



and which was not, until later, in Christian times, transferred to the monasterial officer.

*mynstres teōþingéaldras*, „*de decanis monasterii*“. Ben. R. 7, 1  
*sýn zesette tō teōðingéaldrum*, „*constituantur decani*“. Ben.  
 R. 46, 10.

Frequently this is abbreviated into the simple *éaldor*, „*princeps praepositus*“ (= also abbot!):

*ðā éaldras, decani*. Ben. R. 46, 12; etc.<sup>1)</sup>

§ 198. In addition to *teōðing-éaldor*, but occurring only in the ecclesiastical sense, we have the borrowed term *decan*, occasionally in the Latin form *decanus* with now and then a Lat. inflexion.

Both of these foreign vocables are found rather rarely — especially the latter — and in late O. E.

They occur in the following passages:

*a decanis*, „*fram decanum*“. Ben. R. Log. 104, 3.

*ðet wes Boia ðe éalde and Ælvric decan*. . . . *Ʒodwine decan and manæga oðre mid him*. Cod. Dipl. No. 922 (very late O. E.).

*a decano*, „*fram decane*“. De C. M. 414, 7.

*qui totius claustrī sub decano curam gerat*, „*únder þām decane*“. De C. M. 433, 16.

*Æfic sē æðela decanus*. Chron. C 1037.

*Æðelnoð munuc sē þe wæs decanus æt Crīstes cyrcan*. Chron. D 1020.

*heora decanus*. Ben. R. Log. 110, 16.

*þurh þone decanum*. Ben. R. 125, 8 (F).

Note. The queer form ‘*decanonas*’ plur. (*þurh decanonas*, „*per decanos*“. Ben. R. 125, 8), waiving the possibility of a mere scribal error, probably originated through popular confusion with ‘*canon*’.

§ 199. The office of dean is *decan-hād*, „*dean-hood*“, — or, with more extended application, *éaldorscipe*, ‘*praepositura*’, ‘*auctoritas*’, ‘*decania*’.

<sup>1)</sup> It should be noted that *éaldor*, in Ben. R., is used, finally, to denote any elderly monk, elderly monks in general, — Lat. ‘*seniores*’, ‘*priores*’ (Ben. R. Log. 116 et seqq., etc.).

*decania, decanhād.* Ben. R. Log. 54, 2. = *éaldorscype*, Ben. R. *super decanias suas*, „*embe heora éaldorscypas*“. Ben. R. 46, 11.

§ 200. The monk, „*monachus*“, is in O. E. *munuc* (*munec*) str. m., probably borrowed in pre-Christian times (5<sup>th</sup> Cent.) from a Romance source (Pogatscher § 165).

The suffix *-uc*, instead of the expected *-ic* (*monicus*), is probably the result of suffix-transfer, as in *clēroc* and other words (Pog. § 234).

Note. Kluge in Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, p. 341 derives O. E. *munuc* from a form *monacus*, and the O. H. G. and O. S. terms (*munih*, *munik*) from the Rom. *monicus*.

In O. H. G. we have as corresponding vocable the term *munich*. O. N. *munkr* was, according to Kahle (p. 13), taken from the O. E.

Passages illustrating *munuc* need scarcely be cited as the word is of such frequent occurrence.

§ 201. Lat. *monacha*, „nun“, appears in O. E. as the feminine of *munuc*, *sēo mynecenu* (variant forms: *mynecynu*, *minicenu*, and weak *mynecene -an*). Cf. sub ‘*canonicus*’ for the official distinction between O. E. *mynecenu* and *nunne*, ‘*sanctimonialis*’, and for the frequent confusion of the two expressions.

#### Examples.

*monacha vel monialis*, „*mynecenu*“. Ælfric, Wr. W. 155, 26, with which compare 155, 36: *Nonna*, „*ārwurðe wudewe vel nunne*“.

*non solum monachos verum sanctimoniales etiam*, „*nā þan munecas ac ēac mynecyna*“. De C. M. 366, 7.

*Riht is ðæt mynecena mynsterlice macian efne swā wē cwædon æror be munecan*. . . *riht is ðæt prēostas and esen wēl nunnan rezollice libban*. Inst. Pol. Th. p. 431.

Etc.

The well-known conception of the nun as the Bride of Christ is also present in O. E. Thus Ecg.’s Poen. Th. p. 370 reads:

*Ʒif hwā mynecene, ðe Ʒodes brȳd bið gehāten, him tō wīfe nimð, beo heo amānsumad.*

Cf. also Bl. 61: *mið þæm mannum þe beoð Crīste tō brȳdum gehālgode*.

Etc.

§ 202. The probationer, or novice, Lat. 'novitius', is termed in the Ben. R. a „new-comer“, O. E. 'nīw-cumen man' (nīg-, nī-). Ben. R. 97, 11. 99, 3.

*nīgēcumen brōðor*, „frater novitius“. Ben. R. 97, 2. 101, 15.

*sē nīcūmena brōðor*, „ipse frater novitius“. Ben. R. Log. 98, 6.

*sē nīcūmena*, „ille novitius“. Ben. R. Log. 97, 17. 98, 2.

In the same sense, likewise, the present part., *nīw-cumend: in cella novitiorum*, „on hūse nīcūmendra“. Ben. R. Log. 96, 2.

There are no instances of the use of novice, feminine, Lat. 'novitia', in genuine O. E.; yet, undoubtedly, the same O. E. expression — 'nīw-cumen man' — must have been used to denote the female probationer, as the following passages from the Early M. E. version of the Ben. R. prove:

*Be þām nīwan swuſtram*, „de disciplina suscipiendarum Sororum“. 'Winteney Version der Regula S. Benedicti', p. 115, 20 (Arnold Schröer, Halle, 1888).

*in cella novitiarum*, „on nīcūmenre manne hūse“. Ibid. 115, 30; and similarly 117, 13.

The compound *léorning-mon*. which we have formerly met only in the sense of 'disciple' (§ 59), occurs in Bede in a single passage to signify a female novice: *in þæm [mynstre] sēo gemyngade cyninges dohtor* [i. e. *Ælflæd*] *ærest wæs discipula & léorningmon regollīces lifes, ond eft æfter ðon wæs magister & lāreow þæs mynstres*. Bede 236, 33 et seqq. (Lat., „*primo discipula regularis vitae*“).

§ 203. Monkhood, the monastic state — 'habitus monachus' — was termed correspondingly by the Anglo-Saxon *munuc-hād*, a word embracing the condition of monastics of both sexes:

*sēo ærest wiifa is sægd in Nórðanhýmbra mægðe ðæt heo munuchāde . . . . onfenge*. Bede 332, 25.

*ða ðe clēric hædes sýnd and munuchædes wilniað.* Ben. R. 107, 13.

Etc.

§ 204. Expressions relating to the consecration of monks and nuns.

'To become a monk' is denoted in O. E. either by the simple literal rendition '*munuc weorðan*', or by the phrase already noted (vid. „take orders“, „become a clergyman“, § 123, n. 1) '*sceare onfōn*', 'to receive the tonsure'.

The transitive notion „to make, consecrate, a monk“, is expressed in the customary fashion by '*munuc* (resp. '*tō munuce*') *gehāðian*, *gehālgian*'; or the verbal derivative of *munuc*, viz. *munecian* is employed. Cf. *biscopian*, § 151.

*he [Cēnred] cōm tō Rōme and þær scire onfeng and munuc wæs gewōrden.* Bede 448, 23; similar: *ibid.* 450, 8.

*hē hine mōt munecian*, „*se monachum potest facere*“. Ecg.'s Confess. 27 (only example).

Concerning the consecration of nuns, we have to record, in addition to the corresponding phrase '*tō mynecene gehāðian*, *gehālgian*' (Lives XX, 35 et seq., etc.), only the well-known expression 'to take the veil', in O. E. '*hālig-refte onfōn*', from *hālig-refst* (-rift) str. n. 'holy veil'.

The Lat. '*velamen monialium*' was thus not literally rendered by the Eng.

The combination '*hālig wrigels*' 'holy veil', from *wrigels*, '*velum*', '*velamen*' was likewise known:

*mid þæm mannum ðe beoð Crīste tō brýdum gehālgode, seoððan hī mon mid þæm hālgan wrigelse bewrið.* Blick. 61.

#### Illustrations of the use of *hālig-refst*:

*hēo þær hāligrefte onfeng and Godes þeowhāde*, „*accepto velamine sancti monialis habitus*“. Bede 318, 8.

*Effigenia . . . is þæs heofontlican cýnges brýd, and mid hālig refte gehālgod.* Hom. II, 476, 32.

*Matheus þā . . . lēde hālig refst ofer hire hēafod and ofer ealra þæra mædena hēafdu.* Hom. II, 478, 5.

*Sca hýlda wæs XXXIII gēara on læwedum hāde and XXXIII gēara únder hālig ryfte: „St. Hilda was 33 years under the veil“; i. e. was a nun for that period. Shrine 149, 5.*

### Monastic Orders.

§ 205. St. Benedict distinguishes four classes of monks in his Rule; viz.

1) Cenobites (*coenobitae*) or cloister monks proper (Grk. *κοινός* denotes ‘in common’), known in O. E. as *mynster-men*, ‘cloister folk’, or as *mynster-munucas*, ‘cloister monks’, as distinguished from the other monkish orders.

For *mynster* (O. H. G. *munustiri*) from \**monsterjo*, *monasterium*, vid. Pog. § 39, and cf. Kluge’s Wörterbuch, art. ‘Münster’.

The meaning ‘cloister folk’ is likewise shared by the corresponding O. N. expression *Klaustra-maþr*, plur. *Klaustura-menn*. Vid. Kahle p. 34.

2) Anchorets or hermits (*anachoretæ*). Vid. § 182 et seq.

3) The Sarabaites (*Sarabaitæ*), — „*monachi, qui nulla regula approbati, adhuc operibus servantes seculo fidem, mentiri Deo per tonsuram noscuntur*“. Du Cange.

The idea of the Sarabaite is paraphrased in O. E. by the compound *sylf-dēma*, i. e. ‘Self-judge’.

4) The ‘*gyrovagi*’ — vagrant or strolling monks, in O. E. *wīd-scriþul*, from *wīd*, ‘wide’, ‘far and wide’, and the adj. *scriþul*, ‘fond of roaming’, which belongs to the same root as the verb O. E. *scriðan*, German ‘*schreiten*’, ‘to advance’, ‘to move forward’. This class of monastics, says the author of the Benedictine Rule, „is in all respects worse than even the Sarabaites“! (Ben. R. 10, 1. Ben. R. Log. 10, 15 et seq.).

### Examples.

§ 206. *mynster-mon*: *Fower synt muneca cyn. Ðæt forme is mynstermonna, þæt is þāra ðe únder regule and abbodes tæcinge on gecampe wuniað.* Ben. R. 9, 1 et seqq.

*Mynster-mannum gedafenað ðæt hī on stīlnysse heora līf ādrēogan.* Hom. II, 342, 29.

*Be mynstermonna hræzlhuse, „de vestiario fratrum“.* Ben. R. 8, 10. Etc.

Note. With *mynster-mon* compare the rare compound *mynster-fæmne*, 'cloister woman', 'cloister virgin' (for the use of *fæmne* cf. § 34, n. 1), found Bede 18, 18: *on þām ylcan mynstre sum lgtel sweltende cniht be naman genemde ða mynsterfæmnan ðe him æfterfyligende wes.*

*mynster-munuc*: *þā mynstermunecas úrnon tō, „currentes fratres“.* Hom. II, 176. Similar, II, 178. I, 532.

and *nē ðearf ænig mynstermunuc . . fæhðbōte biddan.* Æthelr. VIII, 25; and the same Cn. I, 5, § 2<sup>a</sup>, 'monachus ecclesiasticus'.

The anchoret: *Ōþer cyn is āncrena, þæt is wēstensetlana.* Ben. R. 9, 5.

The „Self-judge“, or Sarabaite, '*sylf-dēma*': *þrīdde cyn is muneca ealra atelucost, sylf-dēmena.* Ben. R. 9, 10.

The *wīd-scriðul*: *þæt fēorðe muneca cyn is, þē is wīd-scriþul genæmned, þā ealle heora liflāde geōnd missenlice þēoda farað and twām and þrīm dazum geōnd missenlicra monna hūsum wuniað, æfre unstaþolfæste and woriende . . ; on eallum ðingum hīe synt wyrsan þænne þā sylfedēman, þē on ānre wununge stilnesse hēaldað.* Ben. R. 9, 20 et seqq.

§ 207. There yet remain two monasterial offices undesigned; viz.

1) The convent steward and treasurer, the '*cellarius*', in O. E. *sē hórdere* (*hórd* = 'treasure', Mod. Eng. 'hoard'):

*sē hórdere.* Hom. II, 178, 22 & 32. Ben. R. Log. 61, 4. Ben. R., etc.

2) The '*portarius*', or gate-keeper, —

*sē zeat-wéard,* Ben. R. Log. 112, 7. Ben. R., etc.

### General Terms

#### Applied to the Monastic Clergy and Congregations.

§ 208. In every age it has been the custom to conceive the monks and nuns as „Brothers“ and „Sisters“ of a spiritual family. As in general, so also among the Anglo-Saxons. The

„*fratres*“ and „*sorores*“ of the ecclesiastical language of their evangelizers were rendered by them, in literal simplicity, „*ḡā* (*ge-*)*brōḡor* (-*ra*, -*ru*, -*ro*)“, „*ḡā swēostor* (-*tra*, -*tru*)“, — terms that heretofore had referred exclusively to blood-relationships:

„*Professus sum monachum et psallam omni die septem sinaxes cum fratribus*“, „... *mid gebrōḡrum*“. Ælfrie's Colloq. Wr. W. 90, 4.

*wē zeacsodon fram ḡām brōḡrum ḡæs mynstres*, „*a fratribus monasterii*“. Bede 4, 17.

*ḡā atēawde sweoster wūndorlīc zesyhḡ, pære noma wæs Torhtgyḡ*. Bede 286, 30.

*eal sēo zesomnung brōḡra and sweostra on twā healfe sīngende ġmbstōdon*. Bede 320, 32.

Etc., etc.

§ 209. The congregation as a whole, consisting either of brothers or sisters, or of both combined, was denominated as follows:

1) *ḡā hīwan*, *hīgan* (sing. is lacking), ‘the members of a family collectively’, ‘*familia*’; then ‘inmates of a cloister’ (for ‘*hīwan*’ = ‘clergy’, vid. § 121) — very frequent:

*cunctis fratribus ac sororibus, eallum pām hīgum*. Bede 174, 24.

Of ‘brothers’ only, e. g. Bede 182, 19: *ḡā hīwan him ḡe in ḡēm mynstre wæron*. Etc., etc.

§ 210. 2) *hī-red*, masc., ‘*familia*’ (vid. also ‘Clergy’, § 121). Cf. O. H. G. *hī-rāt*, ‘*connubium*’, Mod. Ger. ‘*Heirat*’.

*ponne brake hē his ofer Godes sit and . . ealles pæs hīredes pē on pān mynstre sī*. Cart. Sax. No. 917.

*frīone hīrēd*, ‘a free monastic congregation, or community’. Ælfred's ‘Gesetze’, 2. Etc. in Schmidt.

§ 211. 3) *hī-ræden* (*hīw-*), fem., ‘*familia*’; — rather rare in a religious sense:

*for bēnum abbodes and ḡære hēorædene æt Berclea*. Chart. Th. 129, 30 (Bos. Toll.)

§ 212. 4) *ðæt gefēr* str. masc.

The sense is, properly, 'society', — literally, 'that which accompanies one on a journey', 'company', '*comitatus*', from the verb O. E. *gefaran*, 'to fare', 'to journey'.

In the Ben. R., the term occurs in reference to the conventual '*congregatio*', '*conventus*':

*Be ealles gefēres éndebyrdnyse, de ordine congregationis.*  
Ben. R. 113, 20.

*an mētincge þeah ðæs gefēres, in conventu tamen.* Ibid. 46, 2; etc.

§ 213. 5) Rarely, and in the same sense, *gefēr-scipe*, a word denoting properly 'society' in general:

*si tanta fuerit cohors societatis (sc. monasterii), „. . gefēr-scipes“.* De C. M. 423, 5.

§ 214. 6) *gefēr-ræden* str. fem., '*congregatio*', from *gefēr* (see above) and *ræden*, '*conditio*', 'state of being'. Vid. § 30.

7) *gesomnung* fem., 'assembly', has already (§ 28) been fully treated.

§ 215. 8) *framscipe* masc. (very rare), properly 'a fraternal society united for a common interest', a fraternity; O. E. *fremman*, O. N. *frama*, Ger. *frommen*, 'to aid', 'to further'.

*from þyssa munuca framscype tō lārenne Crīstes zeleafan ángelpēode wæs sénded Aidan sē bisceop, „ab horum collegio monachorum“.* Bede, 160, 6 et seqq.

§ 216. 9) *zaderung*, *zegaderung*, fem.

a) The fundamental sense of the word is 'joint' or 'joining', '*compages*', '*junctura*'; from the verb *zaderian*, properly 'to join together' (Mod. Engl. '*gather*', Ger. '*gatten*'). The stem *gad-* is in the same gradation-series as O. E. *gōd*, 'good' — properly 'that which is fitting'; cf. Kluge's '*Wörterbuch*', and Skeat.

Thus Wr. W. 207, 28: *compagem, juncturam vel zegaderung*.  
And ibid. 381, 39: *copulas, zegaderunga*.



Out of this primitive sense was developed quite a number of derived meanings, in which, however, the original idea of 'belonging together', of 'suitability' is never entirely lost. Thus we have

b) *gezaderung* = 'concio', 'assembly', in general, or 'collection of objects':

*congregatio, concio, gezaderung.* (Gloss of the 10/11<sup>th</sup> cent.)

Wr. W. 170, 39. 309, 40. Etc.

*Hēr onginð seo zadorung ðære blōstmena þære æftran bēc.*  
Blooms 349, 22.

Then, modified by the influence of Christianity:

c) Synonym of the Jewish synagogue:

*Sinagoga, gezaderung.* Ælfric, Wr. W. 107, 21.

This is the only passage showing *gezaderung* in this sense.

d) For 'ecclesia', the Christian Church. Vid. § 31.

e) As a designation of a cloister community or congregation.

The Ben. R. Log. shows, especially, a preference for *gezaderung*, as compared with the Ben. R. which never uses this term (cf. *gefēr, gefēr-ræden*, § 212, 214):

*congregatio, gezæderung.* Ben. R. Log. 53, 16, etc. etc.

Similar: De C. M. 422, 7.

*convocet abbas omnem congregationem, „zelángige sē abbod ealle gezæderunge“.* Ben. R. Log. 17, 13.

§ 217. 10) The compound *munuc-regol*, which properly denotes the monastic Rule, may also by a metonymy designate the order of monks living under the Rule. Cf. Earle, Land Ch. p. 219 (A. D. 1002):

*ic geann intō ælcum munucregole .i. púnd*, „I grant to every monastic order one pound“.

This is my only example of the above.

§ 218. The Conventual Chapter.

The general assembly of the Brothers or Sisters, held at certain fixed seasons, — the conventual chapter (so called because for the general edification a chapter was read aloud on such occasions) is called in O. E. *sē capitul*, a term derived from the Lat. *capitulum*.

For *capitul* = the chapter of a book, vid. Bos. Toll.: we are here concerned only with the later and acquired sense of the word, not with its original meaning.

*æfter heora capiteles geéndunge hý onscōzen and tō cyrican gān.* Reg. Con. Zup. 116.

*capitulo facto, matutinalique missa celebrata,* „*capitule ge-dōnum*“, De C. M. 388, 4. Very similar: 401, 7. 390, 7.

*convenientes ad capitulum . . ad orientem salutent,* „*samod cumende tō capitule*“. De C. M. 385, 4.

*recitetur in capitulo omnes pariter surgentes,* „*.. on capitule*“. De C. M. 399, 15.

*debet reticere in capitulo venturi diei,* „*þæt hē sceal for-swīgean* (Ms. for sugean) *on capitule þæs tōwerdan dæges*“. Ibid. 434, 5, — and very similar, *ibid.* 434, 9.

## Chapter 4.

### Ecclesiastical Dress. Revenues of the Church. Conclusion.

#### 1. Ecclesiastical Dress.

§ 219. Just as, on the Continent, the dress of the Christian-Roman clergy was only gradually differentiated from the profane mode of attire of the ancient Greeks and Romans, and just as the former was not to be distinguished from the latter by any sharp line of division before A. D. 800, so was there likewise in England during this period no especial liturgical dress to distinguish the clergy from the laity (cf. James p. 37).

In rendering the various expressions denoting costume, clothing, and the like, the O. E. employs native terms whenever the expression in question is of a general nature; if, however, it signifies some special article of dress, either borrowed words or compounds are used.

Thus „dress“, „clothing“, „garment“ in general is denominated:

*gierela* (*gezerela*, *gegyrla*) wk. masc.:

*biscopgegyrlan*, „*saderdotalia indumenta*“. Bede 90, 2.

*diacongegyrlan*, „*clericalia indumenta*“. Bede 90, 2.

*sub habitu monachorum*, „*únder muneces gegyrlan*“. Ben. R. 135, 21.

*hrægl* (*hrægel*),<sup>1)</sup> neutr. Cf. Mod. E. „night-rail“.

*Be mynstermonna hræglhuse*, „*de vestiario fratrum*“. Ben. R. 8, 10.

---

<sup>1)</sup> An exceptional case where *hrægl* is used to denote the archiepiscopal pall is treated below § 241.

*Be þām . . . sacerdlicum hræglum, „de vestibus sacerdotum“.*  
Bede 482, 13.

*rēaf* n., plur. *ðā rēaf*:

*substantia monasterii in ferramentis vel vestibus, „rēafum“.*

Ben. R. Log. 63, 2, and Ben. R. etc.

*scrūd* n. „*habitus*“.

*hē sylð him ándlyfene and scrūd, „dat ei victum atque vestitum“.* Deuteron. 10, 18.

§ 220. On the other hand, the particular garments were denoted as follows:

Lat. *pallium* — *sē pallium*. Lat. *tunica* — *sēo tunice*.

Lat. *dorsale* — *hricg-hrægl*, i. e. „back-dress“, „back-rail“.

The compound „*ðæt mæsserēaf*“, literally the „mass-dress“, denoted the ecclesiastical garment used at the celebration of the mass. Etc., etc.

The illustrations are found below accompanying the corresponding garments.

The Garments considered separately.

§ 221. We shall commence with the „*Amictus*“, or Amice.

Among the Romans this garment denoted simply a loose wrap or covering. In the ecclesiastical inventory, the amice is a square piece of linen cloth thrown about the head and shoulders of the priest. Cf. Kraus, Art. 'Kleidung'; Oxf. Dict., Art. 'Amice'.

Ecclesiastical writers often call the '*amictus*' also '*humeralē*', '*superhumeralē*'.

The O. E. is acquainted with the following three equivalents of the Latin terms mentioned, —

1) The compound *ofer-brædels*, used almost exclusively, and corresponding almost exactly with the '*amictus*' not only as a secular, but also as a liturgical garment.

*Ofer-brædels* belongs to the same family as the verb O. E. *ofer-brædan*, 'to overshadow', 'put a covering over', and Ger. '*breiten*'.

*operimentum, oferbrædels*. Wr. W. 78, 38 (9<sup>th</sup> Cent.).

*palla, cyrtel vel oferbrædels*. Ælfrie Wr. W. 107, 26.

*Hē þencð on ðām oferbræðelse his mōdes*, 'He thinks superficially'. Past. 55, 18.

*Thær synd twā Crīstes bēc and II rōdan and . . II weoved sceatas and II overbræðels*. — Church inventory. Cart. Sax. No. 1324.

*Hē [= sē sācerd] bið swiðe gerisenlice beswapen mid swiðe whitige oferbræðelse on bēam scūldrum*. Past. 83, 21.

2) *Scūldor-hrægl* n., 'Shoulder-rail', a translation of Lat. 'superhumale':

*Superhumale, scūldorhrægl*. Wr. W. 327, 24. As this is the only passage where *scūldor-hrægl* occurs, we must consider its further use in O. E. as uncertain. A similar difficulty is presented by

3) *Eaxl-clāð* m., i. e. 'Shoulder-cloth', Lat. 'humale'. In this case, however, we are certain as to one point, viz. that the O. E. *eaxl-clāð* was used to denote the sacerdotal humeral veil of the Jews.

Thus, in reference to the sacerdotal costume of Aaron in the Old Test., it is said:

*læde eaxlclāð ofer hine*, „desuper humale imposuit“. Lev. 8, 6.

§ 222. The tunic of the clergy and secular classes is sometimes rendered by the native terms '*cyrtel*', '*serc*' ('*syric*'), or '*hrægl*'. But more usually the O. E. employs the Lat. word in the form '*tunece*' ('*tunice*', '*tonice*'), wk. f. For the failing Umlaut cf. *munec*, -uc; and vid. Pog. § 113.

*Cyrtel* and *syric* are likewise Lat. derivatives: *cyrtel* from Lat. '*curtus*' either, as Pogatscher has surmised (Pog. § 260), through the mediation of O. N. *kyrtill*; or more probably<sup>1)</sup> directly from the Lat. \**curt*- with the ordinary O. E. suffix -el. In the latter case *cyrtel* would belong to the Continental Period of O. E. Cf. O. H. G. *churz*, N. H. G. *kurz* and see Kluge in Grd.<sup>2</sup> I, p. 337.

*syric* is derived from the Latin '*tunica serica*' (Pog. § 129):<sup>2)</sup>

<sup>1)</sup> The very early appearance of the word in O. E. (already in Ælfred's Oros. 18, 21) is the chief objection to Pog.'s surmise.

<sup>2)</sup> Cf. Sievers, Zum ags. Vocalismus, Decantsprogramm 1900, p. 11.

*Duas tunicas et duas cucullas*, „*twā tunican and twā cuflan*“. Ben. R. Log. 92, 9 &c.

*tunicam et pallium*, „*þine tunecan . . ðinne wæfels*“. Mt. 5, 40. The North. version has here, „*tunicam, cyrtel vel hrægl*“.

*cucullam et tunicam*, „*cuzelan and syric*“. Ben. R. 89, 10.

### § 223. The Dalmatic.

From Dalmatia we get the garment known to the Romans as ‘*tunica Dalmatica*’. Originally a purely secular article of apparel, the ‘*Dalmatica*’ became by order of Pope Sylvester (314—335) limited to clerical usage.

Until after the beginning of the 9<sup>th</sup> century, the dalmatic was a distinguishing mark of the Roman hierarchy, and of the Pope and the deacons especially. Since then it became customary to confer it upon the foreign (i. e. non-resident in Rome) deacons; and at a still later period bishops were permitted to assume, on solemn and festive occasions, the dalmatic of the deacon. It is this later custom which gave rise to the designation in O. E. of this garment as ‘the bishop’s coat’, *biscop + rocc*; e. g. Leechd. III, 202, 26, *Mid biscoprocce scrýðan*, Lat. ‘*dalmatica*’.

The earlier practice is preserved in O. E. *ðiacon-rocc*; thus — *Diacono dalmatica induto*, „*ðiacone mid ðiaconrocce gescrýddum*“. De C. M. 416, 2.

In addition to the above, we have in O. E. likewise the weak loanword ‘*dalmatica*’, borrowed without change from the Latin.

It is found in the following passages:

*sē ðiacon mid dalmatican gescrýð*, ‘*dalmatica*’. Reg. Con. Zup. 174, and similar, Ib. 171.

Finally, in a church-inventory of the Cod. Dipl. No. 940 we read, —

*V fulle mæsserēaf and II dalmatica [= dalmatican]*.

For the precise construction of the Dalmatic vid. Oxf. Diet.

Note. The Oxf. Diet. has no instance of the use of ‘dalmatic’ in English earlier than the year 1425. As the above cited passages show, the word was beginning to be used, however, as far back as the end of the O. E. period.

§ 224. The alb, Lat. '*tunica alba*' was originally a long, white ('*albus*' — whence the name), blouselike, festive tunic, comprising the principal undergarment of the Greeks and Romans. As a liturgical vestment the alb is first mentioned towards the close of the 4<sup>th</sup> Cent., although the tunic was worn by the priest at the altar as his most prominent garment since the 1<sup>st</sup> Century A. D. (Cf. Kraus).

In O.E. the Lat. word is adopted in the form of the weak fem. '*albe*':

*Alba, albe.* Wr. W. 327, 21.

*ðā* [sc. *diaconas*] *sceolon on hwītum alburn ðām Hælande þēowīzan.* Ælfric's Canons. Th. p. 444.

*ælc prēost hæbbe . . . subuculam under his alban.* Edg.'s Canons. Th. p. 398.

Further: De C. M. 403, 4. 408, 13. Reg. Con. Zup. 172. &c.

Note. The Oxf. Dict. cites as the earliest example of the use of '*albe*' the passage quoted above (*ælc prēost hæbbe* etc.), the date of which is about 1100.

§ 225. A second expression sometimes used to designate the principal vestment of the priest is the more general term *ofer-slype* (-*slip*, -*slop*) str. n., '*superpelliceum*', i. e. the surplice — a word which corresponds to the O. N. *yfirsloppr*, '*superpelliceum*', '*alba*'.

The simple O. E. *slop*, *slype*, denotes a flowing garment or dress (Cf. Mod. E. „a child's slip“, or pinafore, cited by Bos. Toll.), and is referred to the same stem as the verb O. E. *slūpan*, *slēap*, *slupon*, *slopen*, 'to slip', 'glide'.

*Wē lærað ðæt mæsse-prēosta oððe mynster-prēosta ænig ne cume binnan circan-dyre . . . būton his ofer-slype (ofer-slope, variant).* Edg.'s Canons 46.

The word is, however, likewise used in a non-liturgical sense to signify merely a long, loose robe:

*Hē [= sē apostol] is ymbscrýð mid hwītum oferslype, „vestitus colobio albo . . induitur pallio albo“. Hom. I, 456. ambulare in stolis, „in stolum vel on oferslopum“. Lind. Lk. 20, 46 ('stola' here in the old sense of long robe; see below).*

§ 226. The '*cingulum*', or priestly girdle, is in O. E. *sē gýrdel* (i. e. properly 'little girth' — cf. Kluge, Wtb. sub *Gurt* and *Garten*; and Skeat, *Gird*, *Girdle*).

As may be supposed, the O. E. *gýrdel* (*gýrdels*) is not at all limited to the liturgical '*cingulum*': E. g. Leechd. III, 260, 20: *wē hātað on Leden quinque zonas, ðæt sýnd fīf gýrdlas. Cingulum vel zona vel cinctorium, gýrdel.* Wr. W. 327, 27. Etc.

§ 227. The ecclesiastical manipule, in Lat. *manipulus* or *manuale* (also called, until the 8<sup>th</sup> Cent. *mappula*), was in appearance very similar to the stole (see below); but in place of being worn about the neck it was originally carried in the hand ('*manus*') and later on the left arm of the priest.

Accordingly, we have in O. E. the very faithful rendering *hánd-līn*, i. e. hand-linen, hand-cloth: *līn* str. n. flax, linen.

*Manualis, hándlīn* Wr. W. 124, 34. 376, 26.

*IIII subdiacones hándlīn.* Chart. Th. (Bos. Toll.).

In O. N. we have precisely the same expression: '*handlīn, manipulus*' (Kahle S. 39; Taranger p. 345).

§ 228. The stole (before A. D. 800 known as '*orarium*', since then as '*stola*') was at first only a napkin or handkerchief ('*sudarium*') of oblong shape ('wie ein langer Schleier', says Kraus) in stead of the usual square.

It thus required but few modifications to assume the dimensions of the present liturgical vestment.

The *orarium* is called in O. E. *stole* wk. f., from Lat. *stola*: *si vero sacerdos fuerit, circumdatur ei stola super cucullam, „sī ymbūtonséald him stole . . .“* De C. M. 443, 11. Vid. also Ibid. 404, 16. 403, 7.

*I sylurene stōrcille, . . . IIII sylurene calices . . . VIII stolan.* Cart. Sax. No. 1128 (Church inventory).

*alba, albe. casula, mæssehacele. stola, stole.* Wr. W. 327, 23.

§ 229. The strong neuter *stol*, which is found only in North., translates Lat. *stola* in the original sense of long, flowing outer garment in general.



Thus in D. Rit. *stola glorie, stol wüldres*. 45, 16. Similarly, Lind. Lk. 15, 22, 20, 46 &c.

Unfortunately, the scanty sources of the North. dialect prevent us from determining whether the term *stol* also included the liturgical stole or not.

In Bos. Toll. the two terms *stole* and *stol* are wrongly classed together, as if interchangeable in meaning.

§ 230. The mass-garment proper of the Roman priesthood was the sacerdotal '*casula*', known, prior to A.D. 800, as '*planeta*'.

The chasuble had an opening in the middle for the head, and fell down over the shoulders and arms.

In rendering '*casula*' the O.E. employs the native compound *mæssehacele* wk. f., from *hacele*, upper garment, coat; cf. O.N. *messuhokull*, O.H.G. *hachul*, Goth. *hakuls*.

#### Examples.

*Casula, mæssehacele.* Wr. W. 327, 22.

*Thær sýnd twā Crīstes bēc . . . . and twā mæsserēaf and III mæssihakelan.* Cart. Sax. 1324.

&c.

Note. The interesting loanword *casul* occurs once as the translation of the Latin *birrus* in a gloss of the 10<sup>th</sup> Cent. (Wr. W. 196, 39); but it is entirely uncertain whether it has any liturgical sense. Certainly the use of *birrus* in explanation would not seem to indicate the chasuble; cf. Ælfrie's Gloss, Wr. W. 151, 41: *birrus, unsnēde hrægel* — 'a rough garment'! Vid. also Du Cange sub '*Birrus*'.

§ 231. The compounds *mæsse-rēaf* n., and *mæssehrægel* n., as would appear from their second elements, denote rather the mass-vestments or mass-vesture generally than any particular garment used in the celebration of the mass. The following examples will make this distinction clear:

*Ðes pāpa zesette ðæt mæsseprēostas ne sceōldon brūcan gehālgodra mæssehrægla būton on cyrcean ānre.* Shr. 112, 19 (Bos. Toll.).

*sē hālga Swiðūn on scīnendum mæsserēafe stōd æt pām wēofode.* Lives 21, 354.

*Thær synd twā Crīstes bēc . . . and twā mæsse-rēaf and III mæssehakelan.* Cart. Sax. 1324, &c.

*ic geann . . . ānes mæsserēafes mid eallum ðām ðe ðærtō gebyrēð.* Cod. Dipl. No. 694.

*intō crydian time þrēo þeningbēc and ān mæsse-rēaf.* Chart. and Doc. X.

§ 232. In the passages now to be cited, *mæssehrægl* and another compound, *mæssegierela* (*gierela*, 'dress', 'clothing'), are used to denote the fine garment worn by the high priests of the Old Test. and called in Lat. the superhumeral („superhumeral“). Cf. Du Cange for a more detailed description.

*Fordon is tō-æacan ðām twī-blion godwebbe ðæt scyle beon twī-ðræwen twīn on ðām mæssegierelan,* „in superhumeralis ornamento“. Past. 87, 19 ('Surplice'-Sweet).

*tō ðām wīte ðæs mæssehrægles,* „pulchritudini superhumeralis“. Past. 87, 22, and ib. 83, 9. 89, 1.

§ 233. „*Cappa*“ and „*pluviale*“ were terms used in Low Lat. to designate a cloak-like overdress, which, like the more classic „*paenula*“, was worn on journeys or in rainy weather. Being supplied with a hood, it was also known as the „*cuculla*“, and soon became a favorite article of dress of monasteries.

In O. E. both *cappa* and *cuculla* were adopted into the language: *cappa* appearing as the weak fem. *cæppe*, and *cuculla* as *cugele* (*cuzle*, *cuhle*, *cule*) — whence the Mod. Eng. „cowl“.

§ 234. The *g* in *cugele* shows us that the immediate prototype of the O. E. word must not be sought in classic Latin, but in the Romance, in which, soon after the year 400, the inter-vowel voiceless consonants became voiced. Now in the latter half of the 5<sup>th</sup> Cent., Lat. *u* became changed in the Romance languages to *o* (Pog. § 157, 159). Consequently the adoption of the O. E. word must have occurred at some period between A. D. 400 and 450.

The O. H. G. *kugula*, with the same sense, must also have been acquired about this time; whereas the M. L. G. and M. D. forms *kogel*, *cogel*, evidently date from after 450.

*Cugele* presents a very interesting secondary form, viz. *cufle*, with the same meaning. The latter is most probably derived from a Middle Lat. or Romance *\*cufella*, the diminutive of *cufia*, „*tegmen capitis*“.

The change of meaning would be easily explained either by contamination with *cugulla*, or by a natural development from the general sense to the special, from head-covering generally to the monastic head-covering — the cowl.

The existence of *\*cufella* is furthermore indicated by M. L. G. *kovel* and M. D. *covel*, ‘a monk’s cowl’, which, as in the case of *kogel*, *cogel*, must have been borrowed after the Rom. vowelchange *u > o*. For the passage of *f* to *v* between vowels in O. S. vid. Gallee, *Altsächsische Gram.* § 112 and Holthausen, *Alts. Elementarb.* § 197.

O. N. *kufi* seems to have been borrowed from O. E., and the variant *kofl* from O. S.

Note. Bos. Toll. and Sweet do not record the form *cufle*; the Oxf. Dict. (Art. „*Cowl*“) refers to the allied forms in O. N., M. L. G. and M. D., but offers no explanation („The history of *cufle* and its allied forms is obscure“).

Vervijns and Verdam, in their „*Middelnederlandsch Woordenboek*“ (1885—1894), give a formally irreproachable derivation from Lat. „*cubella*“, the prototype of M. H. G. *kübel*, „little tub“.

But the Lat. word has never meant anything but „small tub“; and it is therefore difficult to understand how „*covel*“, borrowed from it, could arrive without any apparent middle stages to the widely divergent sense of *cowl*.<sup>1)</sup>

It would seem, therefore, far more probable that *cufia* (*\*cufella*) should be the true prototype — a term which even in Latin approaches very closely in meaning to ‘cowl’.

Pogatscher does not treat the word.

### Examples.

§ 235. In O. E. the *cuculla* or monk’s cowl is always rendered by *cugele*, *cufle*. On the other hand, *cuculla* in the sense of the liturgical *cappa*, or cope, is, with a few exceptions (vid. below), expressed by *cæppe*:

<sup>1)</sup> As for their second suggestion that Lat. *copula* may have been the source of *kovel* etc., it need not be seriously considered, since *copula* does not occur in the sense of cowl, hood, before the 15<sup>th</sup> century, and then but very rarely. Vid. Du Cange.

*we þeah gelyfað . . . ðæt hē* (sc. *sē munuc*) *hæbbe cugelān and syric*. Ben. R. 89, 10 (Wells Frag.; *culan and syric*).

*sēo cūhle*. Ibid. 89, 13 (Wells Frag.: *sēo cūle*).

*cappa, cæppe . . . cuculla, cugle*. Wr. W. 328, 10, 14.

*planeta, cæppe*. Ælfric's Voc. Wr. W. 124, 31. Ibid. 327, 25.

*penula, gerēnod cæppe*. Ibid. 124, 32.

*residui tres* (sc. *fratres*) *succedant omnes quidem cappis induti*, „ . . . *mid kæppum*“. De C. M. 427, 2.

*eadwine mæsseprēoste .V. manc gōldes and his kæppan*. Will of Bishop Alford of Crediton (A. D. 1008—1012). Chart. and Doc. X, 17.

Note also the compound *canter-cæppe* = *cæppe*:

*abbas stola et cappa indutus*, „ . . . *mid cantercæppan gescrydd*“. De C. M. 403, 7.

Perhaps this should be *\*cantel-cæppe*, '*cantel-cope*', from *cantel* (Lat. *cantellus*), „a quarter of cloth“; cf. Oxf. Diet. Art. „*cantelcope*“.

The following passages contain *cæppe* in the old sense of 'cloak' generally: Hom. II, 160 (Lat. „*melotem*“) and I, 336.

§ 236. A few native equivalents of Lat. *cappa* (*sacerdotalis*) occur —

a) *hōd* str. m., O. H. G. *huot* (Mod. G. *Hut*), prop. cap or hood. For etymology cf. Kluge, Skeat, and Oxf. Diet.:

*Ȝif hē* (i. e. *sē prēost*) *godspel ræde, lecge him þæne hōd ofer þā scūldra*, „*si autem evangelium legat* (sc. *cucullam vel cappam*) *super humeros ponat*“. Con. Ecgb. 9 (MS. X).

Note. The Oxf. Diet. has no example of this use of *hōd*; cf. Art. „*Hood*“.

b) *heden* str. m., hood, „*casula*“:

*sacerdos cum missam cantat, ne portet cucullum nec cappam*, „*ne hæbbe hē on heden ne cæppan*“. Con. Ecgb. 9.

*ðæt hē* (= *sē prēost*) *him ofdō his oferhacelan oððe heden, ac ȝif hē evangelium ræde wyrpe him of heden oððe cæppan on his gescýldro*, „*necesse est ei cappam suam vel cucullum exuere; si autem evangelium legit, cucullum vel cappam super humeros dejiciat*“. Con. Ecgb. 9 (XY).

c) *ofer-hacele* wk. f., hood, cope. Cf. *hacele* and *mæsse-hacele*. My only example has already been cited under *heden*.

The above-cited illustrations show clearly that the *hōd*, the *heden*, and the *ofer-hacele* were not the same as the chasuble, or *mæsse-hacele*; for it is expressly provided that they are not to be worn during the celebration of the mass.

### § 237. The scapular.

When at work it was customary with the monks to lay aside their cowls and to replace them by a short cloak or cape covering only the shoulders (*scapulae*). This was termed in O. E. *Scapularia* wk. m., < Lat. *scapulare*; or else the Lat. form was adopted without change:

*hæbban hȳ eac mid tō wyrcenne scapulare, ðæt is gehwæde cugelān and slyfleāse*, „. . *scapulare propter opera*“. Ben. R. 89, 13. Ben. R. Log. has here, „and *scapularian*“. Ben. R. Log. 91, 17.

I have no further examples of this expression.

### § 238. The dossal.

Behind the seats of the clergy in the chancel it was customary to hang „*dorsalia*“, or ornamental draperies; and an especially fine one adorned the cathedra of the bishop.

In O. E. the dossal was called *hricg-hrægel*, „back-rail“, back-dress — a faithful rendering of the Lat. *dorsale*.

Examples of *hricg-hrægl* are not frequent in O. E. literature, and are found only in documentary writings.

Thus we read in the will of Bishop Alford of Crediton: *Ēadgyfe his swyster, ān stricghrægl and I hricghrægl*. Chart. and Doc. X, 21.

And again in Cod. Dipl. No. 694:

*ic zeann ðæder intō ðære hālgan stōwe . . ānes mæsserēafes . and ānes hricghrægles ðæs sēlestān ðe ic hæbbe.*

### The Pall.

§ 239. Bishops, especially archbishops, were granted by the Pope a particular ensign of jurisdiction in the form of the pall, or episcopal cloak.

The Lat. *pallium*, which also denoted mantle or cloak generally, was twice borrowed by O. E.: first in the popular form *pæll*, *pell* (after the time of the breaking!), „cloak“, „costly mantle“; and a second time at a later period, in the learned form *pallium*, *sē pallium*.

Note 1. According to the Latin prototype, we should expect a neuter noun — \**ðæt pallium*. Perhaps the masculine form is to be accounted for by confusion with the older *pæll*, *pell*, which is masculine. Cf. on this point Pog. § 287, and Sievers' Gram.<sup>2,3</sup> § 80, Anm. 4.

Note 2. As the word *pell* for *pæll* is of rare occurrence, and is important for the later linguistic development as being the prototype of M. E. *pelle*, I shall give here a list of those passages in which I have found the form in O. E.:

*pallium*, *pell*. Ælfric's Gram. p. 257, 3 (MS. h). *palliatu*s, *mid pelle gescryd*. Ibid. 257, 3 (MSS. hU).

*pā seltcūðan mærdā . . . on pellum and purpuran*. Ass. VIII, 18.

*mid hāligdōme . . . of Michæles pelle*. Lives 6, 73.

*iiii pellas*. Chast. Th. (Bos. Toll.).

With the exception of Ass. VIII, 18, all these passages have already been noted by Bos. Toll.

On *pell* cf. Morsbach, M. E. Gram. § 107, Anm. 5.

### Examples.

*pallium onfēng sē biscop in Arecla þære byrig*, „*pallium Arelatensis episcopus accepit*“. Bede 72, 22.

(*hē*) *þone pallium genam on Scē Petres wēofode*. Chr. D. 1022.

*Hēr Cēolnoð ærcebiscep onfēng pallium*. Chr. A, anno 831. Similar, *ibid.* 736, 764, etc.

*ðæt his æftergengan symle þone pallium and þone ercehād æt þām apostolican setle . . . feccan sceöldon*. Hom. II, 132, 10.

§ 240. Now and then we find the archbishop's pall termed *sē ærce* (*erce*):

*mē ðinð [= ðincð] ræd þat ðū ealra ærost fare tō Rōme æfter þīnon ærce*, „*pro pallio vestro*“. Chron. F, anno 995 — Earle p. 332, Plummer p. 130.

*hē* [sc. *sē pāpa*] *scōlde gifan heom ðone erce*. Ibid.

This „*sē ærce*“ is probably the abbreviation of a full form \**sē ærce-pallium* — which, however, does not seem to be found; for we must reject the passage Chron. F, 997 (Earle). — *Hēr*

Ælfric arb. [= *arcebiscope*] *fērde tō Rōme æfter his arce-pallium* —, since, according to Plummer p. 131, in the original „*pallium* is written above *arce* as if a gloss to it“.

§ 241. Finally, we have in the North. dialect the native *hrægl* applied to the translation of Lat. *pallium*, the pall:

*archiepiscopus . . sive summus episcopus qui et pallio uteretur*, „*sē ðe æc ðæm hrægle zebrūce*“. D. Rit. 194, 14 (only example).

§ 242. Turning our attention to the „*mitra episcopalis*“, or bishop's mitre, we find that it was known in O. E. as 'the bishop's hood' — *biscope hūf(e)*, from *hūfe*, O. H. G. *hūba*, O. N. *hūfa*, 'hood'.

The expression occurs only in gloss-form and is found but once:<sup>1)</sup>

*Mitra vel diadema, biscope hūf.* Wr. W. 188, 20.

From *hūfe* is derived the verb *hūfian*, to furnish with a hood or mitre. Thus, in Lev. 8, 13 it is said of the sons of Aaron:

(*Moises*) *scrīdde his suna mid and . . . hūfode*, „ . . *imposuitque mitras*“.

§ 243. Note. *biscophēafodlīn*.

This expression occurs but a single time in O. E., being found in Ælfric's gloss as the equivalent of the Lat. *infula* (Wr. W. 152, 23).

Now, *infula* denotes in Eccl. Lat. either a sort of ornamental fillet or band of cloth worn as a head-dress, or it may signify the '*amictus humeralis*', the amice.

The O. E. *biscophēafodlīn*, 'bishop's head-cloth' does not help us, as, 'head-cloth' could denote either a fillet or the amice. It is possible that this garment is the same as the M. E. *heved-līn*, which, according to the „Lay Folk's Mass Book“ (Glossary) signifies 'amice'. Cf. also Oxf. Dict. Art. „*amice*“. Sweet translates (*biscophēafodlīn*) „ornament“.

§ 244. In conclusion, we have to note the rare loan-word '*rationale*', taken bodily from the Lat. without change.

The sacerdotal rational was of two kinds. We find it denoting in the first place the stole of the Jewish high-

<sup>1)</sup> Cf. also Napier, Old Engl. Gl. 5242 *mitrę hættēs, hufan*; 2, 440 *mitrę, .i. tigersa, hufan*; 8, 353 *mitrę, .i. hufan*.

priest in the Old Test. — called the 'rational', because the words embroidered upon it — '*Doctrina et Veritas*' — were to serve as a constant admonition to the priest ('*rationale judicii*').

In the Christian hierarchy, the name 'rational' seems to have generally been applied to a sort of breast-plate of gold, silver, or embroidered stuff worn by bishops during the celebration of the mass. At other times it apparently signifies the pall or pallium. Vid. Du Cange, and the Century Dict. Art. 'Rational'.

In O. E., '*rationale*' is used only in the former or older sense. It is found in the following passages:

and bánd tō þām *rationale* on þām wæs āwriten Lār and Sōðfæstnys, „adstringens cingulo rationali in quo erat *Doctrina et Veritas*“. Lev. 8, 8.

on Arones brēostum sceólde bēon āwriten sīo racu ðæs dōmes on ðām hrægle ðe mon hæt *rationale*. „ . . *rationale judicii*“. Past. 77, 9.

For an account of the Jewish garment vid. Past. cap. XIII.

## 2. The Revenues of the Church.

§ 245. A) The chief source from which the Church derived its support in the Middle Ages was the system of tithing.

The tithe was established in direct imitation of the ancient Jewish system, and was at first regarded purely as a voluntary offering to the Deity. But since the 6<sup>th</sup> Cent. it became an established law of the Church; and we find it after the days of Charlemagne forceably collected.

And so we read in the English laws of the 9<sup>th</sup> and 10<sup>th</sup> centuries provisions of a similar nature. Cf. the Laws of Æthelred (A. D. 978--1014) VIII, 8; and even earlier (between 940—946), under king Edmund, we read of the negligent tithe-payer's being threatened with excommunication; vid. Edm.'s Gesetze I, 2.

According to Æthelred's code (VIII, 6, 7), the tithe was divided into three portions, of which the first was devoted to the repair of church-buildings; the second fell to the 'ministers of God' (*Godes þēowas*), and the third to the poor.



In O. E. the following terms designated the tithe:

§ 246. 1. *tēoðung* (-ing) fem., 'decimatio', a 'tithing' — the most usual designation. The word is likewise frequently employed in a non-ecclesiastical sense to signify the political classification of the people into Tens or tithings, Lat. *decaniae* (*tēoðunga*); cf. on this point Schmidt's 'Glossar', or Kemble's „Saxons in England“, chap. 9.

Thus *tēoðung* was not created by the Church to render the Lat. *decimatio*, but had already existed in pre-Christian times. Christianity added a new notion to its meaning.

#### Examples.

*Ʒif hwā tēoðunge rihtlice gelæstan nelle, þonne fare tō ðæs cyninges gerefa and þæs mynstres mæssepreost . . and niman unþances þone tēoðan dæl tō þām mynstre ðe hit tō gebirige. Æthelred VIII, 8.*

*Be tēoðungum . and sȳ ælcere geoguðe tēoðung gelæst be Pentecosten. Edgar II, 3.* Very similar, Wulf. 116. &c.

The tithe collected in the spring of the year consisted of young cattle, and was, accordingly known as '*geoguðe tēoðung*', *geoguð*, youth, young, as in the last example cited. In the fall, on the other hand, agricultural products naturally comprised the contribution, which was then called the '*córn-tēoðung*'. Thus Wulfstan tells us (116, 3 — MS. b):

*and córn-tēoðung be emnihte oððe latest be ealra hālgena mæssan, and æfre ðone tēoðan æcer ealswā sēo sulh hit gegā.*

Cf. also Can. Edg. 54: *and geoguðe tēoðunge be Pentecosten and eorðwestma be omnium Sanctorum.*

Similarly, Wulf. 208, 1 et seq., etc.

§ 247. 2. *sē tēoða*, lit. 'the tenth', either by ellipse from '*sē tēoða dæl*', following the Lat. '*decima* (sc. *pars*)', or from '*tēoða sceatt*' str. m., treated below:

*Gif wē ūre tēoðan gesyllan nyllað, ūs ðā nygon dēlas bið ætbredene and sē tēoða ān ūs bið tō lāf. Laws of Æthelstan, Thorpe p. 84.*

*Ic þē wille gesyllan mīne tēoðan, „decimas offeram tibi“. Æthelstan I, 2 (Schmidt, Liebermann).*

To the stem *tēoð-* belongs the verb to tithe, O. E. *tēoðian*, 'decimare':

*And hīredmanna gehwīlc sille pænig tō ælmæssan . . . and heāfodmen tēoðian* ('give tithes'). *Æthelr.* VII, App. § 5. *Wulf.* 181, 16 et seq.

*man gēlēoðige . . . þæt þæt god sēnde þonne on gēare folce tō þearfe on cōrne and on flexe and on gewelhwylcon wæstmē.* *Wulf.* 310, 21 et seq.

§ 248. 3. *tēoða sceatt*, pl. *tēoðan sceattas*, 'decimae'; from O. E. *sceatt*, 'money', 'wealth'. Cf. O. H. G. *scaz*, 'money'; Goth. *skatts*, 'money'; O. N. *skattr*, 'tax', 'tribute', as in *Rúmsskattr*, 'Peter's pence'.

*þæs heretēames ealles tēoðan sceat Abraham sēalde godes bisceope.* *Gen.* 2121. *Bríngað gē on mīn beren ēowerne tēoðan sceat.* *Blick.* 39, 26.

*ðonne lāre ic ēow, . . . ðæt gē syllon ēowre tēoðan sceattas earmum mannum.* *Ibid.* 49, 19.

§ 249. 4. *tēoðing-sceat*, 'tithing tax':

*ðæs nēadgafoles ðe crīstene men ȝode gēlæstan scóldon on heora tēoðingsceattum* ('in their tithes'). *Edgar IV*, 1.

Cf. above sub '*tēoðing*' and '*tēoða sceat*'.

In addition to the tithe, the O. E. sources make frequent mention of other contributions of minor importance. They are the following.

§ 250. B) Church-shot, in O. E. *cyric-sceat*, consisting in a certain quantity of grain or other products, and paid annually at St. Martin's Day (11<sup>th</sup> of Nov.).

*Cyricisceattas sīn āgífene be Sēe Martines mæssan* ('Martin-mas'). *Ine* 4. Similar: *Wulf.* 116. 311.

*And cyricsceat tō Martines mæssan; and sē ðe hine ofer ðæne dæg hēalde, āgyfe hine ðām bisceope and forgýlde hine XI sīðan and ðām cīngce CXX scyll.* *Cnut I*, 10.

&c.

§ 251. C) Soul-shot i.e. a burial tax — O.E. *sāwl-sceat* or *sāwl-scot* — a sort of fee payable to the church of the deceased before the burial took place. This latter provision was always insisted upon; for the *sāwl-scot* was regarded by the clergy as a well earned increment. The O.E. corresponds to the '*symbolum animae*' or '*pecunia sepulturae*' of the Latin version of the Laws.

The stringent enforcement of the soul-shot is clearly shown by the following citations:

*þæt hē æfter forðsiðe būtan sāwulsceatte ne licge on mynstre, ac gelæste man ā þone sāwelsceat æt openum pytte* ('paid at the open grave'). Wulf. 118. Very similar *ibid.* 208, 25.

*And sāwlsceat is rihtast ðæt man symle gelæste æt openum græfe.* Æthelr. V, 12. VI, 20. Cf. also Earle, Land Ch. p. 222 (anno 1006).

*Æt ælcum forð farenum gildan æt ælcum héorðe ænne penig tō sāwulsceote . . .; and ðat sāwulgesceot sceulon þā canōnicas habban.* Chart. Th. 609, 10—18 (Bos. Toll.). Cf. also Æthelstan I, 4. Edg. II, 5. Cn. I, 13. &c.

Note. The final element of *sāwlscot* (-*gesceot*) must not be confused with that of *sāwl-sceat*.

The etymological connections of *sceat* have already (vid. *tæða sceat*) been explained. *gescot*, *scot*, are participial derivatives of the verb *sceotan* (part. *gescoten*), 'to shoot', secondarily, 'to advance (shoot) or contribute money', just as in German we have the phrase 'Geld vorschliessen'.

§ 252. D) *leoht-gescot* (-*gesceot*, -*scot*), i. e. 'lightshot', or tax for the illumination of the churches. This contribution was levied, according to the laws of Æthelred, every year at Candlemas, the feast of the purification of the Virgin (2<sup>nd</sup> Feb.). Later, it was provided by Cnut that light-shot should be paid three times per year; viz. at Easter, All Saints' Day, and Candlemas.

*leohtgescot gelæste man tō Cāndelmæssan; dō oftor sē ðe wille.* Æthelr. VIII, 12.

*And leohtgesceot priwa on gēare, ærest on Ēasterāfen healf-penigwurd wexes æt ælcere hīde, and eft on Ealra Hālgena Mæssan eallswā mycel, and eft tō þām Sanctan Marian clænsunge ealswā.* Cnut I, 12. Very similar, Wulf. 116, 6.

&c.

§ 253. E) Plow-alms — *sulh-ælmæsse* — was an annual tax consisting of a ‘*penig*’ for every ‘plow’ of land, and was to be paid always 15 ‘nights’ after Easter; cf. Schmidt’s ‘Glossar’.

The O. E. expression is compounded of *sulh*, ‘plow’, and the loan-word *ælmesse* (*ælmysse*) ‘alms’, derived from M. L. *alimosina*, classic L. *eleemosyna*. For the origin of *ælmesse* vid. Pog. §§ 38, 75, 207, 237; and Oxf. Dict. for its later history (Art. ‘Alms’).

*us gebyrēð þæt wē . . . gode betæcan ure sulhælmessan XV niht on ufan eastran.* Wulf. 208, 1. 311. Also: Edw. and Guthr. 6 § 3. Can. Edg. 54.

Etc.

This contribution was apparently called sometimes ‘alms-fee’, O. E. *ælmess-feoh*; from *feoh* = Mod. Eng. *fee* (originally ‘cattle’). Cf. the Latin version of Edm. I, 2: “*ælmessfeoh* i. e. *elemosine pecuniam*” — a phrase which occurs likewise in the Latin versions of Append. III, 1 and *ibid.* III, 2. Read also the explanation given by Schmidt in his ‘Glossar’.

§ 254. Peter’s Pence, ‘*denarius Sancti Petri*’, was by the Saxons no longer conceived of as a pious offering or gift of a voluntary nature presented to St. Peter; but was regarded (more practically than ideally) as a necessary tax paid to Rome by all true Catholics.

Thus we find the Peter’s Pence termed as follows:

*Röm-feoh*, Rome-fee, Rome-money:

*And rōmfeoh gelæste man æghwylce gære be Petres mæssan.* Wulf. 311, 1. Further, Edw. & Guth. 6, § 1. Edm. I, 2. Cnut I, 9.

*Röm-pænig*, ‘Rome-penny’:

*Wē willað ðæt ælc Rōmpænig bēo gelæst be Petres mæssan tō þām bisceopstōle.* Append. II, 57, § 1 (‘Nordhumbrisches Priestergesetz’).

Etc.

*Röm-scot*, Rome-shot, Rome-tax (rare):

*De denario Sancti Petri qui anglice dicitur Romescot* [*Rōm-gescot?*]. Edw. Confess. 10.

Cf. also these passages from Chron. E (Transition Engl.)

*man syððan ðæt Rōmgescot sēnde* (in form perfectly pure O. E.). Anno 1095 (end).

*hē cōm æfter þe Róme-scot.* 1123.

*Rōm-scot* must, however, have been popularly much in vogue; for it is quite probable that the corresponding O. N. expressions *Rúmskatr*, *Rómaskatr* were direct adaptations of the English. Cf. Taranger pp. 290, 291.

*heorð-penig*, i. e. 'hearth-penny'; so-called because every 'hearth' (= fire-side), or family, in the land was expected to pay the tax.<sup>1)</sup>

*And sý ælc heorðpening āgyfen be Pētres mæssedæg, and sē ðe hine tō þām Andagan gelæst næbbe, læde hine tō Róme and þærtō eacan XXX penega.* Edg. II, 4. The very similar passage, Wulf. 116, has here as variant readings *rōmpænig*, *rōmpenig*.

Etc.

As we see in these various examples, the sole connection of the *Rōm-penig* of the Anglo-Saxons with St. Peter was in the day of its collection — St. Peter's Day.

---

<sup>1)</sup> Another *heorð-penig*, mentioned in App. III, 3, was payable on Ascension Day ('Holy Thursday') and signified possibly Plow-alms; vid. Schmidt's note to the passage in question.

## Conclusion : Summary.

---

Words marked (†) are of doubtful classification.

### A. The Foreign Element.

#### I. Period (Continental) — before A. D. 450.

##### § 255. 1. Greek.

*cirice* (κυριακά).

*dēofol* (διάβολος or Lat. *diabolus*).

##### § 256. 2. Latin.

*āmbiht*, *ōmbiht*, *āmbeht* (ambactus).

*cyrtel* (curtus).

*regol*, *reogol* (regula), any rule or standard; in Christian times also Benedictine Rule: Pog. § 44.

*scrifan*, *scrift* (scribere, script-um).

*scrīn* (serinium).

##### § 257. 3. Gallo-Roman.

*biscop*, *biscob* (\*ebescobu, \*ebescopu < episcopus).

*cugele*, *cugle*, *cuhle*, *cule* (\*cugulla < Lat. cuculla).

*cufle* (\*cufella, diminutive of Lat. cufia).

*munuc*, *munec* (\*monicus < monachus; but cf. § 200 n).

*mynecen*, -e, -u (\*monica < monacha).

*mynster* (\*mon'sterjo < monasterium).

†*prēost*, *prēst* (\*prēstre < presbyter; perhaps after 450).

†*prēostlic*, cf. *prēost*.

†*prōfost*, *prāfost* (praepositus, propositus; cf. § 195 and

Sievers' Gram.<sup>3</sup> § 192, 2) — perhaps, as Pogatscher thinks (§ 108), borrowed at first in sense of overseer, director, generally, and modified to 'provost' in Christian times.

### III. Period (Christian) — A. D. 600—1066.

#### § 258. 1. Latin.

*acolitus* (accolytus).

*albe* (alba).

*āncor, āncora, āncra, oncor, ancor* (anachoreta; cf. § 183 n. 2).

*apostol, postol* (apostolus).

*apostollīc, 'apostolicus'.*

*Baptista, -an.*

*bæstere, bæzere, bæðcere, bezere* (Baptista).<sup>1)</sup>

*cānōneclīc* (canonicus + -līc).

*cānōnic* (canonicus).

*cantere, cantor* (cantor).

*capitul* (capitulum).

*cappa, cæppe, (cappa)* — after 650; cf. Pog. §§ 355, 356.

*clēric, clēroc, clīroc, clerc* (clericus).

*dalmatica* (tunica Dalmatica).

*decan, decanus* (decanus).

*diacon, deacon* (diaconus).

*discipul, discipulus* (discipulus).

*discipula.*

*Ebrēisc, ðā Ebrēas* (pl.) (Hebraeus).

*erce-, ærce-, arce-* (archi-).

*erce, str. m. < \*erce-pallium.*

*erce-diacon, archi-diacon* (archidiaconus).

*evangelista, -an.*

*exorcista, -an.*

*Farisēisc, Farisēus, pl. Farisēas, Farisēi* (Pharisēus etc. < Pharisaeus).

*Israhēl, pl. Israhēle* (Israel).

*Israhēlisc, Israhēlitisc.*

*Iudēisc, iūdisc, etc.* (Iudaeus).

*martyr(-e), (martyr).*

<sup>1)</sup> Cf. Kluge, D. Litteraturzeitung 1902 p. 1000.

*martyrian*, 'martyrizare'.  
*martyrologia*, -an (martyrologium).  
*martyrologium*.  
*martyrung*, 'passio martyris'.  
*oratio*, exorcism.  
*pallium*, str. m., pall.  
*pāpa*, -an (papa).  
*patriarcha*, -an, patriarch.  
*pæll*, *pell* (pallium).  
*pistol* (epistola).  
*propheta*, -an, prophet.  
*rationale*, rational.  
*reliquias*, -e, (reliquiae).  
*sācerd* (sacerdos).  
*Saducēisc*, pl. *Saduceas*, *Saducie*, etc. (Sadduceaus).  
*Samaringas*, plur. (Samaria + -ing).  
*Samaritan(isc)* (Samaritanus).  
*sanct*, *sancte*, *sanctus*, *sancta*.  
*stol*, str. n., *stole*, -an (stola).  
*subdiacon* (subdiaconus).  
*tunice*, *tonice* (tunica).

## § 259. 2. Gallo-Roman.

*abbod*, *abboda*, -an (\*abbad-em < abbatem).  
*abbodisse*, *abbudisse* (abbatissa).  
*abbot* and *abbutisse*, through influence of the Latin forms.  
*ælmesse* (alimosina < eleemosyna).  
*biscopian* ('episcopare' — 3<sup>rd</sup> period derivative of 1<sup>st</sup> period word).  
*biscopung*, confirmation (3<sup>rd</sup> period derivative of 1<sup>st</sup> period word).  
*domne* (dominus).  
*lāwed* (\*laicatus < laicus).  
*mæsse* (\*messa < missa).  
*mæssere*, mass-priest; cf. *mæsse*.  
*munecian* ('monachare' — 3<sup>rd</sup> period derivative of 1<sup>st</sup> period word).  
*nunne* (nonna).  
*seonod*, *sionod*, etc. (synodus).



**B. The Native Element:** original material, but influenced by Christianity.

Words marked (†) could belong to C, a).

§ 260. *áeldo-mann* (pharisaeus).

(*ðā*) *áldo*, *éldo* (pharisei, seniores).

*áldor-mann* (pharisaeus, pontifex).

*áldo-wutu* (cf. *éald-wita*; pharisaeus, senior).

*áldra* (senior, pharisaeus).

*ándettere*, *ondettere* (confessor).

*ærendwreca*, *-raca* (apostolus).

† *æwe-wéard* (sacerdos).

*boda* (propheta).

(*ðā*) *brōðor*, *ge-brōðor* (fratres monasterii).

*ceorl*, *ceorl folc* (laicus, laici).

*cniht* (discipulus).

*cýðere* (martyr).

*cynna* (gentiles).

† *duru-wéard* (ostiarius).

*ðegn*, *ðen* (discipulus).

*ðeoda* (gentiles).

*ðingere* (priest).

*ðrōwere* (martyr).

*ðrōwung* (passio).

*eadiȝ* (beatus — properly 'wealthy').

*éaldor* (prior conventualis; decanus monasterii; senior).

*éaldor-scipe* (abbatia; decania).

*éald-fæder* (patriarcha).

*éald-wita* (presbyter; senior).

*ē-swica* (ethnicus).

*fæder* (pater monasterii; abbas).

*ge-fēr* (congregatio monasterii).

*ge-fērrædenn* (congregatio, ecclesia; congregatio monasterii).

*ge-fērscipe* (clerus; congregatio monasterii).

*folgere* (discipulus).

*fōstring* (discipulus).

*framscipe* (collegium monachorum).

(*ge*)-*gaderung* (congregatio, ecclesia; congregatio monasterii synagoga).

*gāstlic* (spiritualis).  
*geat-wéard* (portarius monasterii).  
*zingra* (discipulus).  
*Goda* (proper name; formerly 'sacerdos').  
*had* (ordo; clerus).  
*† hālig* (sanctus).  
*hālsere* (exorcista).  
*(ge-)hālsian*, exorcise.  
*hālsigend* (exorcista).  
*hālsung*, exorcism.  
*hæl* (salus; salvatio).  
*hælnes* (salus; sanctuarium).  
*heah-fæder* (patriarcha; archimandrita; pater excelsus, Deus).  
*heden* (casula).  
*hīeremonn*, *hýrigmonn* (discipulus; parochianus).  
*hírde* (pastor).  
*hīwan*, *hīzan*, plur. (familia episcopi, clerus).  
*hīwræd*, *hīrēd* (familia episcopi, clerus).  
*hīwræden* (familia monasterii).  
*hōd* (cappa, cope).  
*hórdere* (cellarius monasterii).  
*hrægl* (pallium archiepiscopale).  
*hūsl*, Eucharist (properly 'sacrifice'; vid. Oxf. Dict. sub Housel).  
*hýrnes* (parochia).  
*(ge-)laðung* (ecclesia).  
*lāruw*<sup>1)</sup> (pharisaeus).  
*(ðā) geleaffullan*, *-suman* (fideles).  
*léornere* (discipulus).  
*lioda* (gentiles).  
*mōdor* (mater monasterii, abbatissa).  
*ofer-brædels* (amictus; superhumerales).  
*ofer-hacele* (cucullus; cappa sacerdotalis).  
*ofer-slyp(e)*, *-slop* (alba; superpelliceum).  
*rædere*, fem. *rædestre* (lector).  
*rihtwīsend* (sadducaeus; part. to *rihtwīsian*).  
*ge-sælig* (beatus; properly 'fortunate').  
*scearu* (tonsura ecclesiastica).

<sup>1)</sup> Cf. Kluge, D. Litteraturzeitung 1902 p. 1002.

*scīr* (parochia; diocesis).  
*(ge-)sommung* (ecclesia).  
*sóngere* (cantor, precentor).  
*spelboda* (propheta).  
*(ðā) sweostor* (sorores monasterii).  
*(sē) tēoða* (decima pars).  
*tēoðigan* (decimare).  
*tēoðing-éaldor* (decanus).  
*tēoðung* (decimatio).  
*uðwuta* (pharisaeus; scriba).  
*únder-ðeodda, -ðiedda* (discipulus).

### C. New Formations.

#### a) Native.

Words marked (†) perhaps original.

#### § 261. I. Period.

† *æwe-wéard* (sacerdos).  
*godspell* (evangelium).  
 † *hālig* (sanctus).  
*hæðen* (paganus; later also Samaritanus).

#### § 262. III. Period.

*āldo æ-lārwas* (pharisei).  
*ān-būend* (anachoreta, solitarius).  
*ān-setl* (solitarii sedes).  
*ān-setla* (solitarius, anachoreta).  
*æ-cræftig* (pharisaeus).  
*æ-, æs-lāruw; æ-lærend* (pharisaeus).  
*bescoren* (mann), Tonsus; clericus.  
*ðrōwung-ræding* (martyrologium).  
*eaxl-clāð* (humerales).  
*fulwian, fullian* (baptizare).  
*fulwiht, fulluht* (consignatio, baptismus).  
*fulwihtere, fulluhtere; fulwihrtwer* (Baptista).  
*gāstlic folc* (populus spiritualis, clerus).  
*ȝodes ðeow(a)* (minister Dei).  
*ȝodes forboda* (clericus; praenuntius Dei?).  
*ȝodes mann* (clericus; vir Dei?).  
*ȝodspelbōc*, book of the Gospels.

- godspellere* (evangelista).  
*godspellian* (evangelizare).  
*godspelllic, -isc* (evangelicus).  
*(ge)-hādian* (ordinare).  
*(ge)-hādod mann* (clericus, ordinatus).  
*hādung* (ordinatio).  
*(ge)hālgian* (consecrare).  
*hālgung* (consecratio).  
*hāligdōm* (sanctitas; sacramentum; sanctum; reliquiae;  
 sanctuarium; ministerium sacrum).  
*hālignes* (sanctitas; sanctuarium; reliquiae).  
*hālig-reft, -rift* (Velamen monialium).  
*hālig-waras* (sancti).  
*hālig wrigels* (Velamen monialium).  
 † *hānd-līn* (manipulus; originally napkin?).  
*hæðendōm, -scipe, -nes* (paganismus; gentilitas).  
*hæðenisc* (gentilis).  
 [biscop-] *hēafod līn* (infula).  
*hēah-scēawere* (archiepiscopus).  
*hēah-sóngere* (archicantator).  
*heorð-penig*, Peter's Pence.  
*hrycg-hrægl* (dorsale).  
*hufian*, Supply with the mitre (*hūfe*).  
*hūsl-ðegn, -ðen* (accolytus).  
*lār-cneht* (discipulus).  
*lār-hlestend* (auditor, catechumenus).  
*læring-mann* (discipulus).  
*ge-lēafhlystend* (auditor, catechumenus).  
*lēoht-(ge)-scot*, Light-shot.  
*léorning-cniht* (discipulus).  
*léorning-mann* (discipulus, discipula).  
*nī(w)-cumena, -cumend* (novitius).  
*nīw-* (*nīg-, nī-*) *cumen mann* (novitius).  
*sāwl-sceatt, -scot*, Soul-shot.  
*scūldor-hrægl* (superhumerales).  
*sūnder-hālgā* (pharisaeus).  
*sylf-dēma* (Sarabaita).  
*tēoða sceatt, tēoðing-sceatt* (decima).  
*tūngol-wītga* (astrologus).

*wæx-berend* (ceroferarius).  
*wēofod-ðegn* (minister altaris).  
*wēsten-setla* (eremita).  
*wīd-scriðul* (gyrovagus).

### b) Hybrids.

#### § 263. III. Period.

*abbod-dōm, -hād, -rīce* (abbatia).  
*āncor-līf* (anachoretica vita).  
*āncor-setl, -stōw* (sedes anachoretica).  
*āncor-setla* (anachoreta).  
*apostol-hād* (apostolatus).  
*ælmes-feoh* ('alimosinae pecunia').  
*biscop-es hūf(e)* (mitra episcopalis).  
*biscop-dōm, -hād* (episcopatus).  
*biscop-hēafodlīn* (infula).  
*biscop-hīwræd* (familia episcopi, clerus).  
*biscop-rīce, -scīr* (episcopatus; dioecesis).  
*biscop-rocc* (dalmatica episcopi).  
*biscop-seðl, -setl, -stōl* (sedes episcopalis).  
*cīric-ðegn* (minister ecclesiae).  
*cīric-ðingere* (advocatus ecclesiae; sacerdos).  
*cīric-hād* (ordo ecclesiae).  
*cīric-sceatt* (census ecclesiae).  
*cīric-wéard* (custos ecclesiae).  
*clēric-hād* (clericatus).  
*decan-hād* (decania).  
*deofol-wīga* (vates diabolicus, magus).  
*diacon-ðenung, -hād* (diaconatus).  
*diacon-rocc* (dalmatica diaconi).  
*éaldor-biscop* (metropolitanus; princeps sacerdotum).  
*erce-biscop-hād* (archiepiscopatus).  
*erce-biscop-rīce* (archiepiscopatus; dioecesis).  
*erce-biscop-stōl* (sedes archiepiscopalis).  
*erce-hād* (archiepiscopatus).  
*erce-stōl* (sedes archiepiscopalis).  
*hánd-prēost* (cappellanus).  
*hēafod-biscop* (princeps sacerdotum).  
*hēah-biscop* (archiepiscopus).

*hēah-diacon* (archidiaconus).  
*hīwræd-prēost* (presbyter domesticus).  
*læwed folc* (laici).  
*læwed mann* (laicus).  
*lēod-biscop*, Suffragan.  
*martyr-dōm*, -hād (martyrium).  
*martyr gedōn*, gemacian (martyrizare).  
*martyr-racu* (martyrologium).  
*mæsse-ðegn*, Mass-thane.  
*mæsse-gierela*, -hrægl, -rēaf, Mass-vestments.  
*mæsse-hacele* (casula), Chasuble.  
*mæsseprēost-hād* (presbyteratus).  
*munuc-hād* (monachatus).  
*mynster-mann* (coenobita).  
*pāp-dōm*, -hād, *pāpan-hād* (officium Papae).  
*pāp-setl*, *sēld* (sedes apostolica).  
*pistol-rædere* (subdiaconus).  
*prēost-hād*, -hēap, -hired (sacerdotium; clerus).  
*prēost-scīr* (parochia).  
*regol-wéard* (praepositus = custos regulae).  
*riht-canonicus* (canonicus regularis).  
*Rōm-feoh*, -scot, Peter's Pence.  
*Rōm-penig* (Denarius Sct. Petri).  
*sācerd-hād* (sacerdotium).  
*scrift-bōc* (confessionale).  
*scrift-scīr* (provincia confessoris; parochia).  
*scrift-spræc* (confessio).  
*sulh-ælmesse*, Plow Alms.  
*tapor-berend* (ceroferarius, accolytus).  
*ūnder-diacon* (subdiaconus).

### c) Foreign.

#### § 264. III. Period.

*canter-cæppe* for *cantel-cæppe* (?), Cantelcope.  
*erce-biscop* (archiepiscopus).  
*mæsse-prēost* (presbyter).  
*munuc-regol*, Monastic order; convent.  
*mynster-fæmne* (monialis).  
*mynster-munuc* (coenobita).

### D. Minor Distinctions.

#### § 265. Authors and Works.

*æwe-wéard*, Priest (Bl).  
*biscopung* (= *\*biscopung*), Confirmation (Wulf).  
*ciric ðingere*, Priest (Glosses : Ælfrie).  
*cýðere*, Martyr (Ælfrie).  
*ðingere*, Priest (Glosses : Ælfrie).  
*Ʒe-ferscipe*, Clergy (Bede).  
*folgere*, Disciple (Ælfrie).  
*framscipe*, College of monks (Bede).  
*fulwihtwer*, Baptist (Bl).  
*hæðenisc*, heathenish (Oros).  
*hēhfæder*, Patriarch of the Church (Passio Scae. Marg.).  
*læringmann*, Disciple (Ben. R.).  
*martyrung*, Passion (Oros).  
*nunne*, Vestal Virgin (Oros).  
*oratio* (= *hālsung*), Exorcism (Bede).  
*pistol-rædere*, Subdeacon (De C. M.).  
*preost-hēap*, Clergy (Gloss, 11<sup>th</sup> Cent.).  
*preost-hired*, Clergy (Ald. Gloss.).  
*sacerdotum* (dat. pl.) for *sācerdum* (Bede).

#### § 266. Poetic.

*ān-buend*, Hermit (Gū).  
*æ-lærend*, Pharisee (El.).  
*ðrōwere*, Martyr (also in North.).  
*mæg*, Woman.  
*mægð*, Virgin, maid.

#### § 267. Dialectical: Northumbrian-Mercian.

*ǣldo-menn*, Pharisees (Lind.).  
*ǣldo æ-lārwas*, Pharisees (Lind.).  
*ǣldor-menn*, Pharisees.  
*ǣldo-wutu*, Pharisees.  
*ǣldra*, Pharisee.  
*ǣmbeht*, Disciple (Lind.).  
*æ-cræftig*, Pharisee (Lind.).  
*æ-lāruw*, Pharisee.  
*ǣlde wearas*, Pharisees (Rush.).

*ældo* (*ðā*), Pharisees.  
*æ̃s-lārwas*, Pharisees (Rush.).  
*bæstere*, *bæzere*, etc., Baptist.  
*crīstnes*, Christianity (Durham Admon.).  
*cynna*, Gentiles.  
*ðrōwere*, Martyr (North. or poetic).  
*émbihtmonn*, Disciple (Lind.).  
*ēs̃wica*, Heathen (Lind.).  
*fōstring*, Disciple (Lind.).  
*hāligwearas*, Saints (Lind., D. Rit.).  
*hæ̃ðin-monn*, Samaritan.  
*hēah-scēawere*, Bishop (D. Rit.).  
*heh-stāld*, Virgin (Mary).  
*hrægl*, Pall (D. Rit.).  
*hūsul* (= *hūsl*), Sacrifice : Mt. XII, 7 (Lind.).  
*lārcneht*, Disciple (Lind.).  
*lāruw*, Pharisee (Rush.).  
*lōda*, Gentiles.  
*oncræ*, anchoret (Lind.).  
*postol*, Apostol.  
*Samaringas*, Samaritans (Rush.).  
*Stol*, 'Stola', long robe (Lind. D. Rit.).  
*uðwutu*, Scribe; in Rush. also pharisee.

#### § 268. Of Time.

##### Early O. E.

*fæmne*, Virgin.  
*hæ̃ðenes* (Bede), Heathenism.  
*ðā zelēafsuman*, The Faithful.

##### Late O. E.

*confessor* (for *ándettere*).  
*crīstendōm*, Ecclesiastical privileges.  
*ge-ferræden*, Congregation, church.  
*hæ̃ðenscipe*, The heathen world.  
*ge-laðung*, Church.  
*léorning-cniht*, Disciple (also rarely in Ælfred).  
*mæ̃den*, Virgin.



# Index.

(The figures, unless otherwise indicated, refer to the paragraphs.)

- Abbacy 192.  
*abbas* 189. — *abbat* 189. — *abbate* 189. — *abbatia* 192.  
 Abbess 193. 194.  
 Abbot 159. 189—192. 194.  
*abbot* 189 ft. n. 259.  
*abbut* (*abbod*, *abbad*, *abboda*) 189. 189 n. 1, 2. 259.  
*abbuddōm*, *-hād*, *-rice* 192. 263.  
*abbudisse* (*abbadis*, *abbedesse*, *abedis*) 193. 259.  
*abbutisse* 193. 193 n. 259.  
*abote* 189.  
*acolitus* 171. 258.  
*acoluthus* 116. 171.  
 Acolyte 171. 172.  
*advocatus* 112.  
*ældo* (*aldo*, *aldu*) vid. *ældo*.  
*agrestis* 10. 10 n. 1.  
*aikklesjö* 25.  
*airus* 45.  
*ἀρχολουθος* 171.  
*alamōsna* 26.  
 Alb 224. 224 n.  
*alba* 225.  
*albe* 224. 224 n. 258.  
*aldarfāper* 41.  
*aldo æ-lārwas* 5. 262. 267.  
*aldor* (cf. *éaldor*) 5. — *aldor-biscop* v. *éaldor-b.*, *aldor-menn*, „*pharisaei*“ 5. 260. 267.
- aldo wutu* 5. 260. 267.  
*aldra* 5. 260. 267.  
 Alms-fee 253.  
*altfater* 41.  
*amb-* 62.  
*ambactus* 62. — *ambaht* 62. — *ámbeht* 49. 50. 62. 256. 267.  
 Amice 221. 243.  
*amictus* 221. 243.  
*anachoreta* 182. 183. 183 n. 2. 184. 187 and ft. n. 205. — *anachoretica vita* 188.  
*anacor* (v. *āncor*) 183 n. 2.  
*ānbüend* 186. 262. 266.  
*āncer-setl* 185. 188. 263. — *āncer-setla* 185. 263.  
*āncor* (*āncer*, *āncora*, *āncra*, *ancra*, *oncra*) 183. 183 n. 1, 2. 206. 256. 267.  
*āncor-lif*, *-stōw* 188. 263.  
*andbahts* 62.  
*ándet* (*ond-*) 69. — *ándettan* 69. — *ándettere* (*ónd-*) 69. 260.  
*andhaitan* 69.  
 Anglo-Saxon Church v. English Ch.  
*ānsetl* 188. 262. — *ānsetla* 184. 262.  
*antheizan* 69.  
*antistes* 143. 154.  
*apastol* v. *apostol*.  
 Apostles 43—48. 49—63 (as Disciples). 64 (as evangelists).  
 Apostleship 47.

*apostol* (*apostel*, *postol*) 43. 43 n. 63.

258. — *apostolhād* 47. 263. —

*apostollic* 47. 258. — *apostoli* (*ðā*)  
v. *apostol*.

*apostolus* 44 n.

*ār* 45.

*arce-* (v. *erce-*) 134. — *arce-biscop*,  
-*diacon* v. *erce-b.*, etc.

Archbishop 132—141. -*ric* 138.

Archdeacon 168. 169.

*archi-* 132. 134. — *archicantator*

177. — *archidiacon* 169. — *archi-*

*diaconus* 168. — *archiepiscopatus*

135. — *archiepiscopus* 132. 143. —

*archimandrita* 41 n. 191 ft. n.

Archimandrite 191.

*archisynagoga* 28.

-*ari* < -*arius* 10 n. 2.

*aruspex* 173.

*astrologus* 40.

*ā-swīcan* 14.

*auctoritas* 192. 199.

*audiens* 22. — *auditor* 22. 49.

*augur* 154.

*æ* (*æw*) 5. — *æ-cræftig* 5. 262. 267. —

*æfestnis* 23. — *æ-lāruw*, 5. 262.

267. — *æ-lærend* 5 n. 262. 266.

*ælde* *ūdwuta* 5.

*ælde* (*ælde*, *ælde*, *aldo*, *aldu*) 5. 260.

267. — *ælde menn* (*wearas*) 5. 260.

267.

*ælmes-feoh* 253. 263.

*ælmesse* (*ælmysse*) 253. 259.

*ærce*, *ærce-* v. *erce*.

*ærend* 45. — *-wraça* 45 n. — *-wreça*,

-*raca* 43. 45. 45 n. 130. 260.

*æs lārwas* 5. 262. 267.

*æ-swīca* (*ē-swīca*) 9. 14. 260. 267.

*æwe-wéard* 113. 260. 261. 265.

*bābes*, *bābist* 125.

*baðian* 77.

Baptism 22 n. 2.

*Baptista*, -*an* 75. 258.

*baptizare* 10.

Baptize 22 n. 2.

*bæcere*, *bæchere*, *bædzere* v. *bæstere*.  
*bæð* 77.

*bæðcere* v. *bæstere*.

*bæstere* (*bæcere*, *bæchere*, *bædzere*,  
*bæðcere*, *bæzere*, *bezere*, -*a*) 77. 258.

267.

*bæzere* v. *bæstere*.

Beadle 78.

*beodan* 78.

*beorht zelzafa* 23.

*bescorene* (*menn*) 94. 262.

*bezere*, -*a* v. *bæstere*.

*birrus* 230 n.

*biscob* (v. *biscop*) 133 n. 1.

*biscof* 133. 143 ft. n.

*biscop* (*biscep*, *bisceop*, etc.) 132.

133. 133 n. 1. 134. 143. 144. 145.

146. 153. 153 n. 257. — *biscopdōm*

117 ft. n. 138. 148. 148 ft. n. 149. 150.

263. — *biscop-éaldras* 141. — *bis-*

*copes hūf(e)* 242. 263. — *biscop-hād*

117 ft. n. 135. 148. 149. — *-heaf-*

*odlīn* 243. 263. 150. 263. — *-hīwræd*

(-*hīrēd*) 121. 263. — *-rice* 138. 148.

149. 150. 263. — *-rocc* 223. 263.

— *-scīr* 148. 148 ft. n. 149. 263.

— *-setl* (-*seðl*) 139. 150. 263. — *bis-*

*copung* (*biscopung*) 152. 152 n. 259.

265. — *\*biscopus* 133. 133 n. 1.

*biscopung* v. *biscopung*.

Bishop 116. 128. 133. 133 n. 1, 2. 141.

143—154.

Bishopric 148. 150.

Bishop's rochet 223.

*biskop* 133.

*bōcere* ('*scriba*') 6.

*boda* 37. 46. 260. — *bodian* 78. —

*bodscipe* 37.

*bōcere* v. *bōcere*.

Boniface of Wessex, — his work  
among the Germans; Hist. Sk.

Borrowings (the Christian — Latin —),  
Pref.

Bos. Toll. 42 n. 2. 75. 148 ft. n. 189  
n. 2. 229. 234 n.

*Bote* 37. 44 n. — *boto* 44 n.

Bradley 3 n. 3.

- breiten* 221.  
 Brito-Roman Dialect, Pref.  
*brōðor* (*ge-brōðor, -ra, -ro, -ru*) 208. 260.  
*Bugge* 10 n. 2.  
*butil* 78. — *Büttel* 78. — *bydel* 78.  
  
*caelebs* 34 n. 2.  
*Canon* 107. 178—180. — *canon* 198 n.  
*cānon* (*sē*) 178 ft. n. — *cānōneclīc* 180. 258. — *cānōnic* 178. 180. 258.  
*canonicus* 107. 180. — *c. regularis* 178. 180. — *c. secularis* 178.  
*canter-cæppe* 235. 264.  
*cantere* 177. 258.  
*Cantlecope* 235.  
*cantor* 177. 258.  
*capellān* 165. — *capellanus* 165.  
*capitul* 218. 258. — *capitulum* 218.  
*cappa* 233. 235. 236. 258.  
*Cardinal* 131.  
*casul* 230. — *casula* 230. 236.  
*catechizare* 22.  
*Catechumen* 22. 22 n. 2. 75.  
*cæppe* 233. 235. 258.  
*cellarius* 207.  
*Cenobite* 205.  
*céorl* 93. 93 n. 260. — *céorlisc fole* 93. 260.  
*ceroferarius* 171.  
*Chaplain* 164. 165.  
*Chapter* 218.  
*Chasuble* 230. 230 n., cf. 236.  
*Chief Priests* 5. 141. 143. 153.  
*chirece* v. *cirice*.  
*Christen* 22 n. 2.  
*Christendom* 23. 32. 32 n. 1.  
*Christian Era* 23. 32. 32 n. 3.  
*christianitas* 23. 32.  
*Christianity*, Pref. 23.  
*Christians* 11. 19. 20.  
*christianus* 19.  
*Church* (The —) 24—32.  
*Church building*, p. 24 ft. n.  
*Church-shot* 250.  
*churz* 222.  
*cierice* v. *cirice*.  
  
*cingulum* 226.  
*ciric-ðegn* 115. 263. — *ciric-ðingere* (*cyrc-*) 112. 263. 265.  
*cirice* (*circe, cirica, cyrc, cyrice*), Hist. Sk. 24. 25. 25 n. 26. 27. 29. 255. — *ciric-hād* 124. 263. — *hālgung* 82. — *-sceat* 250. 263. — *-wéard* 176. 263.  
*clerc* 108 ft. n.  
*Clergy* (cf. *Priesthood*) 94. 95.  
*Clergyman* v. *æwe-wéard, cānōnic, ciric-ðegn -ðingere, clēric, Goda, Godes ðeow, Godes forboda, Godes mann, gehādod mann, hīrde, prēost, sūcerd, weofod-ðegn*.  
*clēric* (*clēroc, -ec, clāroc, clerc*) 108. 118. 258.  
*clericatus* 118.  
*clericus* 94. 105. 107. 108.  
*clerus* 94. 119. 121.  
*clāroc* 108.  
*cniht* (*cneht*) 49. 50. 51. 61. 62. 260.  
*coenobita* 205.  
*cogel* v. *kogel*.  
*comitatus* 123. 212.  
*Communion* (Holy-) 86.  
*compages* 216.  
*concio* 216.  
*conditio* 214.  
*confessio* 69.  
*Confession* 161. 162.  
*confessionale* 161. 162.  
*confessor* 69. 70. 268.  
*Confessor* 65. 69. 161.  
*Confirm* 151.  
*Confirmation* 152.  
*confiteri* 69.  
*congregatio* 28. 30. 212. 214.  
*Congregation* 27. 28. 29. 30. 209. 216.  
*connubium* 210.  
*Consecrate* 83. — *consecratio* 82. — *Consecration* 82. 111.  
*consignatio* 75.  
*conventus* 212.  
*convocatio* 29 n.  
*Cope* 235. 236.  
*copula* 235 n. (ft. n.).

*cörn-teoðung* 246.  
*coting* 113.  
*covel* 234. 234 n.  
*Cowl* 233. 234. 234 n. 235.  
*Creacas, Creacas* 103.  
*Crist* < Rom. \**crīstus*, Hist. Sk. 19.  
 19 n. — *Crist (cristen)* 19 ft. n.  
*cristan* 19.  
*cristen* 19. 19 n. 146 n. 2.  
*cristena zelæafa (se)* 23.  
*cristendōm* 19 n. 23. 24. 32. 32 n. 1,  
 2, 3. 268.  
*cristen ge-dōn, beon* 22.  
*cristene æfestne (seo)* 23.  
*cristenesta (se)* 21.  
*cristen monn* 19.  
*cristennes (cristnes)* 23. 267.  
*Cristes zelæafa* 23. — *gespelia* 127.  
*cristnes v. cristennes.*  
*(ge-)cristnian* 22. 22 n. 1, 2. 75. — *(ge-)*  
*cristnod* (= 'catechumenus') 22.  
*cristnung* 22. 22 n. 2. 75.  
*cubella* 234 n.  
*cuculla* 233. 235.  
*cufia* 234. 234 n.  
*cufle* 234. 335. 257.  
*cugele (cugle, cuhle, cule)* 233. 234.  
 235. 257.  
*curtus* 222.  
*cyðan* 67. — *cyðere* 65. 67. 260. 265.  
*cynn* 9. 13. 260. 267.  
*cyrc-, cyric- v. ciric-*  
*cyrtel* 222. 256.

*Dalmatic* 223. 223 n.  
*dalmatica* 223. 258.  
*daupjan* 10.  
*Deacon* 108. 116. 166—169.  
*diacon v. diacon.*  
*Dean* 197—199.  
*decan* 198. 258. — *decanhād* 199. 263.  
*decania* 199. 246.  
*decanonas* 198 n.  
*decanus* 197. 198. 258.  
*decima* 247. 248. — *decimare* 247. —  
*decimatio* 246.  
*degan* 61. — *Degen* 61.

*denarius Sancti Petri* 254.  
*deofol* 40 n. 255. — *deofol-witga* 40.  
 263.  
*deot (diot, diut)* 2. 12. — *deutsch*  
 2. 12.  
*Devil* 11 (= *hæden*) 40 n.  
*devisio devisus* 4 n. 1.  
*diabolus* 40 n.  
*diacon (deacon, diacon)* 166. 167.  
 168. 258.  
*diaconatus* 169.  
*diacon ðenung* 169. 263. — *-hād* 169.  
 263. — *-rocc* 223. 263.  
*diaconus* 166. 168.  
*dingen* 112.  
*Diocese* 147. 148. 150.  
*diot v. deot.*  
*Disciples* 49—63. 78 (*bydelas*).  
*discipul* 49. 50. 52. 62. 258. — *dis-*  
*cipula* 52. 258. — *discipulus* 49.  
 50. 52. 61. 62. 63. 258.  
*dispensatio* 148.  
*diut v. deot.*  
*diutisk* 2.  
*dōm, -dōm* 16.  
*dominus* 126.  
*domne* 126. 259.  
*dōpian* 10.  
*dorsale* 220. 238.  
*Dossal* 238.  
*Dress (of Clergy)* 219—244.  
*duru-wéard* 175. 260.  
*dyppan* 10.

*ðegn (ðen)* 49. 50. 61. 62. 157. 167.  
 260.  
*ðeod* 9. 12. 260.  
*ðeow* 5.  
*ðingere (ge-ð.)* 112. 260. 265.  
*þjóð* 12. 12 ft. n.  
*ðrōwere* 65. 68. 260. 266. 267. —  
*ðrōwian* 68. 73. 260. — *ðrōwung*  
*(-ing)* 65. 72. 260. — *ræding* 74. 262.

*zadīg* 260.  
*éald-fæder* 41. 42. 260. — *éald fæder*  
 ('Grandfather') 42 n. 1.

*ældor* 140. 190. 197. 197 ft. n. 260. —  
*āpostol* 140. — *biscop* 140. 141.  
 263. — *burh* 140. — *mann* v. *aldor-*  
*menn*. — *-scipe* 192. 199. 260.  
*Ēaldras* ('Elders') 5.  
*ēald-wita* 159. 260.  
*easl-clād* 221. 262.  
*Ebreas* 2. 258.  
*Ebreisc* 2 ft. n., 3 n. 2. 258. — *Ebrisc*  
 2 ft. n., 3 n. 2.  
*ecclesia* 24. 25. 27. 29. 32 n. 2. 216.  
*einchorano* 183.  
*einladen* 29.  
*Einsiedler* 184.  
*ἐκκλησία* 26.  
 Elders (of the People) 5.  
 Elect (The —) 79.  
*eleemosyna* 253.  
*émbeht* v. *ámbeht*. — *émbehtmonn*  
 49. 62. 267.  
 English Church in Germany, Hist.  
 Sk. 161. — in Skandinavia, Hist.  
 Sk. 161.  
*énkoro* 183.  
*Episcopal* See 150.  
*episcopare* 22 n. 1. 151.  
*Episcopate* 148. — *episcopatus* 148.  
 150. — *ἐπισκοπος* 144. — *epis-*  
*copus* 22 n. 1. 133. 133 n. 1. 143.  
 144. 145. 147.  
*Epithets* — of the Apostles 48. 61.  
 — of Christianity 23. — of the  
 clergy 94. 115. 208. — of John  
 the Baptist 78. — of the Pope 125.  
 — of the Virgin Mary 35.  
*erce-* (*ærce-*, *arce-*) 132. 134. 258. —  
*erce* (*sæ-*, *ærce*, *arce*) 240. 258.  
*erce-biscop* 132. 133. 134. 264. —  
*hād* (*erce-hād*) 135. 263. — *rice*  
*(erce-rice)* 138. 263. — *stōl* (*erce-*  
*stōl*) 139. 263.  
*erce-diacon* 168. 169. 258.  
*erce-hād*, *-rice*, *-stōl* v. *erce-biscop-*.  
*eremita* 182. 183. 187. — *eremus* 187.  
*ēren(d)wreca* (*-wrica*, *-wraça*, *-wreaca*,  
*-raca*) 45 n. cf. *ærendwreca*.  
*Errand* 45.

*z-swica* v. *æ-swica*.  
*ethnicus* 9. 14.  
*εὐαγγέλιον* 64. — *evangelista* 64. 258.  
 Evangelists 64.  
*ēwa* 5.  
*ewart*, *ewarto* 113.  
*Exorcist* 173. — *exorcista* 116. 173.  
 258.  
*familia* 121. 209. 210. 211.  
*(ge-)faran* 212.  
*farisæis* (nom. pl.) 4 n. 3. — *farisæa*  
 (wk. nom.) 4 n. 4. — *Fariseisc*  
 (*-mann*; *Farisæus*, pl. *-i*, *-as*) 4.  
 4 n. 2, 3, 4, 5. 258. — *Farisæo* (*-on*,  
*-os*) 4 n. 2. — *farisæus* (gen. sg.)  
 4 n. 5.  
*fæder* 125. 194. 260.  
*fæmne* 34. 34 n. 1. 35. 268.  
*Fee* 253.  
*femina* 34. 35.  
*feoh* 253.  
*ge-fer* 30. 212. 213. 214. 260. —  
*-ræden* 24. 28. 30. 30 n. 214. 260.  
 268. — *-scipe* 123. 213. 260. 265.  
*flamen* 143.  
*folgere* 49. 50. 53. 260. 565. — *folgoð*  
 196.  
*fora-wizac* 36.  
 Forefather 42.  
*fore tornere*, *forerynel* (*forrynel*) 78.  
*forewitegung* 39.  
*fostring* 49. 50. 62. 260. 267. —  
*fōstur* 62.  
*frama* 215.  
*framscipe* 215. 260. 265.  
*fratres* (*monasterii*) 208.  
*fremman*, *frommen* 215.  
*fullare* 75.  
*fullian* v. *fulwian*; = *fullare* 75.  
*fulluht* v. *fulwiht*.  
*fulwian* (*fullian*) 22 n. 2. 75. 262.  
*fulwiht* (*fulluht*) 22 n. 2. 75. 562. —  
*fulwihtere* (*fulluhtere*) 75. 262. —  
*-wer* 75. 262. 265.  
*zad-*, *zaderian* 216. — *(ge-)zaderung*  
 24. 28. 31. 216. 260.

*ǰastlic folc* 94. 260. 262.  
*Gather, gatten* 216.  
*geat-wéard* 207. 260.  
*gehören* 163.  
*ge-gerela (ge-gyrle) v. gierela.*  
*gens* 9. 12. 146 n. 2. — *gentes (gentiles)* 9. 11. 12. 15. 146 n. 2. — *gentilitas* 16. 17.  
*genus* 13.  
*geogude tzoðung* 246.  
*geóng* 54.  
*gierela (gegerela, gegyrle)* 219. 232.  
*γίγρω* 61.  
*gingra* 49. 50. 54. 260. — *gingre* 54.  
*γίνομαι* 61.  
*Girdle* 226.  
*gōð* 216.  
*Goda* 114. 260.  
*godcúnde æfestnis (seo)* 23.  
*Godes ðeow(a)* 94. 262. — *Godes forboda* 115. 262. — *Godes mann* 115. 262.  
*godspel(l)* 64. 261. — *bōc* 64 n. 262. — *-ere* 64. 262. — *-ian* 64 n. 262. — *-isc, -lic* 64 n. 262.  
*gōði* 114.  
*Gospel* 64.  
*Gothic Church — its influence on Germanic languages, Hist. Sk.* 10. 25. 40 n.  
*gradus episcopalis* 117.  
*Grandfather* 42 n. 1.  
*Greek Church — its influence on the Germanic languages, Hist. Sk.* 25.  
*Grendel* 11.  
*Grimm* 10 n. 1.  
*gudja* 114.  
*guðspjall* 64.  
*gyrdel(s)* 226.  
*ge-gyrle v. gierela.*  
*gyrovagus* 205.  
  
*hacele, hachul* 230.  
*hād, -hād* 47. 111. 123 n. 1, 2. 260. — *(ge-)hāðian* 111. 123 n. 1, 2. 136. 204. 262. — *(ge-)hādod* 92. — *mann* 111. 262. — *hādung* 123 n. 1, 2. 262.

*haga, Hagestolz* 34 n. 2. — *hago-stéald v. heh-stald.*  
*haidus* 123 n. 1.  
*haiþi* 10 n. 2. — *haiþnō* 10. 10 n. 2.  
*\*hail* 79. 79 n.  
*hakuls* 230.  
*hāl* 79 n.  
*(ge-)hālgian* 83. 136. 204. 262. — *hālgung* 82. 262.  
*hālig* 79. 79 n. 260. 261. — *-ðom* 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 262. — *-nes (-nis, -nys)* 84. 84 n. 85. 262. — *-reft* 204. 262. — *-reft onfōn* 204. — *-waras* 262. 267. — *-wrigels* 204. 262.  
*hālsere (hælsere)* 79 n. 173. 260. — *hālsian* 79 n. 173. 260. — *hālsizend (hælsizend), hālsung* 173. 260.  
*hānd-līn* 227. 262.  
*hānd-prēost* 164. 263.  
*Haufe* 120.  
*hæð* 10.  
*hæðen* 8. 9. 10. 10 n. 2. 11. 146 n. 2. 261. — *-ðom* 16. 16 n. 2. 262. — *hæðene ðom* 16 n. 1. — *-isc* 18. 262. 265. — *-monn* 8. 267. — *-nes* 18. 262. 268. — *-scipe* 16 n. 2. 17. 17 n. 1, 2. 262. 268.  
*hæl* 79 n. 260. — *-nes* 80. 260.  
*hælsere, hælsizend v. hāls-.*  
*heafod-biscop* 141. 263. — *\*heafod-fæder* 42 n. 2. — *heafod-līn* 243.  
*heah-, heah-biscop* 132. 263. — *-ðiacon* 168. 169. 263. — *-fæder* 41. 41 n. 132. 142. 191 and ft. n. 260. 265. — *-gesamnung* 28. — *-sceawere* 144. 262. 267. — *-sōngere* 177. 262.  
*heap* 120.  
*Heathen* 1. 9. 10. 10 n. 2. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. — *-ðom* 16. 16 n. 2. 17 n. 2. — *-ism* 16. 17. 18.  
*Hebrews* 2.  
*heden* 236. 260.  
*hēðin* 10.  
*heh- v. heah-.*  
*hehstald* 34 n. 2. 267.  
*heidan* 10. 10 n. 1, 2. — *-tuom* 16.

*heiðenn* 10. — *-dómr* 16. 23.  
*heilag, heilagr* 79. — *heilig* 79 n. —  
*heiligen* 83.  
*heilisari* 79 n. 173. — *heilisðn* 79 n.  
*heill* 79 n.  
*Heirat* 210.  
*-heit* 47. 123 n. 1.  
*hēlag* 79.  
*heorð-penig (-pænig)* 254. 262.  
*Hermit* 182—188. 205. 206. — *-age*  
 188.  
*het'anos* 10 n. 2.  
*hevedlin* 243.  
*Heyne* 133. 133 n. 1.  
*ge-hieran (gehyran)* 55. 163.  
*hieremon(n) (hyre-, hyrig-)* 49. 50.  
 55. 55 n. 260.  
*hīzan v. hīwan.*  
*High Priest v. Chief Pr.*  
*hīrāt* 210.  
*hīrde* 115. 260.  
*hired- v. hīwræd-.*  
*historia* 37.  
*hīwan (hāzan)* 121. 209. 260.  
*hīwræd (hired)* 121. 164. 210. 218. 260.  
*hī(w)-ræden* 211. 260.  
*hīred-præost* 164. 263.  
*hōd* 236. 260.  
*hofobfaþer* 42 n. 2.  
*hōhfater* 41.  
*Holthausen* 99. 101. 102. 103.  
*Holy* 79 n.  
*-hood* 47.  
*hórd* 207. — *hórdere* 207. 260.  
*hrægl (hrægel)* 219. 222. 241. 260. 267.  
*hricg-hrægl* 220. 238. 262.  
*hūða, hūfa, hūf(e)* 242. — *hūfan*  
 242. 262.  
*humale* 221.  
*Humeral Veil* 221.  
*huot* 236.  
*hūsl* 171. 260. 267. — *-ðegn (-ðen)*  
 171. 262.  
*Hut* 236.  
*hypocrita* 14.  
*ge-hýran v. ge-hieran.*  
*hyremonn, hyrig monn v. hīere.*

*Idolatry* 17 n. 1.  
*iernan* 78.  
*infula* 243.  
*iornere* 78.  
*Irish Church in England, Hist. Sk. —*  
*struggle with Rome and defeat,*  
*Ibid.*  
*Irish Missionaries — their philo-*  
*logical influence, Hist. Sk.*  
*-isc* 2.  
*Israel, Israhel* 2. 258. — *Israhelisc,*  
*Israhelitisc* 2. 258.  
*Iūdan, Iudean v. Iūdeas.*  
*Iūdeas (iūdæas, Iūdan, Iūdean,*  
*Iūdei, Iūdeas, Iūdeas, Iūdan,*  
*jūdeas, jūdisc)* 3. 3 n. 1, 2, 3. 258. —  
*Iūdeisc(mann)* 3. 258. — *Iūdeus*  
*(pl. Iūdei)* 3. — *Iūdan, Iūdeas*  
*(Iūdeas) v. Iūdeas.*  
*Jews* 1. 3—7. 11.  
*Johannes Baptista* 75. 76.  
*John the Baptist* 75. 76. 77. 78.  
*Judæus, -i* 1.  
*jūde- v. Iūde-.*  
*judeo (judo), judisk (judeisc)* 3 n. 2  
 and ft. n. 2.  
*junctura* 216.  
*jungiro* 54.  
*Jūnger* 49.

*Kahle, Pref.* 26 and ft. n.  
*Kerl* 93.  
*Kirche* 24. — *kirika, kirkja, kiurkia*  
 26.  
*klaustra-maðr* 205.  
*κληρικὸς, κληρὸς* 94.  
*Kluge, Pref.* 3 ft. n. 10. 19 n. 45 n. 109  
 n. 1. 133 n. 2. 200 n. 258 ft. n. 260  
 ft. n.  
*Knecht* 51. 61. — *Knight* 51. 61.  
*kofl v. kufl.*  
*kogel (cogel)* 234.  
*κοινός* 205.  
*kovel* 234.  
*Krist, Hist. Sk.*  
*kristen, kristenn* 19. — *kristendómr,*

*kristenn dómr* 23. — *kristentuom* 23.

*kufi* (*kofl*), *kugula* 234.

*kund*, *kunþs* 67.

*kuni* (*kunni*) 13.

*κυριακά, κυριακή, κυριακόν* 25.

*kurz* 222.

*kübel* 234 n.

\**kyreikð* 25.

*kyrtill* 222.

*lād* 5.

*laden*, *ladunga* 29. — (*ge-*)*lāðian* 29.

*Laicus* (-i), *laihmann*, *laikmenn*, *λαϊκός* 92.

*Laity* 92. 92 n.

*lār* 5. 56. 62. — *-cneht* 49. 50. 62.

262. 267. — *lārēow* 48 (apostle).

191 and ft. n. (archimandrite). — *lār-*

*hlýstend* 22. 262. — *lāruw* (pl. *ðā*

*lārwas*, „*pharisaei*“) 5. 260. 267.

*lātteow* 5., Kluge 260 ft. n.

*Layman* 92. 93.

*ge-lāeran* 56.

*lāeringmann* (*lāerinc-*) 49. 50. 56. 262. 265.

*lāewan* 92. — *lāwed* 92. 259. — *lāwed folc*, — *mann* 92. 263.

*ge-leafa* 20. — *ge-leafful* 20. 260.

268. — *ge-leafhlystend* 22. 262. —

*ge-leafsum* 20. 260. 268.

*lector* 116. 174.

*ge-lefan* (-*ed*) 92.

*legat*, *Legate*, *legatus* 129. 130.

*Leiche* 47.

*leigo* 92.

*-leiks* 47.

*leod* 146. 146 n. 2. — *-biscop* 146.

146 n. 1, 2. 263. — *-gebyrga*, *-hata* 146.

*leohht* (*ge*)*scot* 252. 262.

*léornere* 49. 50. 57. 260.

*léornung* (-*ing*) *cniht* 49. 50. 58. 58 n.

262. 268. — *-mann* 49. 50. 59. 59 n.

202. 262.

*leowe* 92.

*lęresveinn* 56.

*Leute* 146. — *Leutkirche*, *-priester* 146 n. 2.

*Levita* (-*es*) 168.

*Levite* 166. 168.

*Lewd*, *ge-lēwed*, *lēwjan* 92.

*lic*, *-lic*, *-lich* 47.

*lin* 227.

*Lindström* 101. 102.

*lioda* 8 (= Samaritans). 8 n. 2. 9. 15.

260. 267.

*liutkirche*, *-priester* 146 n. 2.

*ljóð-biskop* 146 n. 1, 2.

*Loth*, *Pref*.

*Lye* 42 n. 2.

*magad* (*magatīn*), *magaps*, *magath*, *Magd* 34.

*Magi* 36. 40.

*magister* 99. 100.

*mago* (-*u*), *-ðegnas* 61.

*Maniple*, *manipulus*, *manuale*, *mapula* 227.

*Maria* 35.

*martartuom* (-*toam*) 71.

*martyr* (-*e*, *martir*) 65. 66. 66 n. 67. 258.

*Martyrdom* 71. 72. — *martyrdōm* 71. 263.

*martyr ge-dōn* 73. 263.

*martyrhād* 71. 263.

*martyrian* (*marterian*, *gem-*) 73. 258.

*martyrium* 71. — *martyrizare* 73.

*martyr gemacian* 73. 263.

*martyrologia*, *-ium* 74. 258.

*Martyrology* 74.

*martyr-racu* 74. 263.

*Martyrs* 65—68.

*martyrung* 71. 258. 265. — *martyrungra* 71.

*Mass-priest* (v. *Priest*) 153 n.

*mater monasterii* 194.

*māden* (*mægden*) 34. 268.

*mæg* 35. 266.

*mægð*, *mægeð* 34. 35. 266.

*mæsaprēast* v. *mæsseprēost*.

*mæsse* 155. 259. — *-begn*, *-þen* 157.

263. — *-zierela* 232. 263. — *-hacele*



230 (cf. 236). 263. — *-hrægl* 231.  
 232. 263. — *-præost* (*-priost* etc.)  
 153 n. 155. 156. 264. — *-præosthād*  
 160. 263. — *mæssere* 156. 259. —  
*mæsse-ræaf* 220. 231. 263.  
*meassa-præost* v. *mæssepræost*.  
*meas-*, *measa* (cf. *mæsse*) 267. —  
*measa-præost* (*meas-*, *measse-*) v.  
*mæsse-præost*.  
 Melchisedec 153 n.  
*meowle* 34.  
*mesa* v. *meas-*. — *mesa-præast*, *-præost*  
 v. *mæsse-præost*.  
*messe-præost*, *-priost* v. *mæsse-præost*.  
*messuhjokull* 230.  
 Metropolitan 140.  
*minicenu* v. *myn-*.  
*minister* 49. 61. 99. 100. 157. 167. —  
*-altaris*, *-ecclesiae* 115.  
*ministerium sacrum* 89.  
*mitra episcopalis* 242.  
 Mitre 242.  
*mōdor* 194. 260.  
*monacha* 179. 201. — *monachare*  
 22 n. 1. — *monachus* 22 n. 1. 200.  
 — *monacus* 200 n.  
*monasterium* 205.  
 Monastic Community 28. 30. 31.  
 Monasticism 182.  
 Monastic Orders 205—207.  
*monicus* 200. 200 n.  
 Monk 200. 200 n. — *-hood* 203.  
 Morsbach 3 ft. n. 4 ft. n. 19 ft. n. 25.  
 103 ft. n. 108 ft. n. 155. — M. E.  
 Gram., Pref.  
 Mönchin 179.  
*munecian* 22 n. 1. 204. 259.  
*munich*, *munih* 200. — *munik* 200. —  
*munkr* 200.  
*munuc* (*-ec*) 200. 200 n. 257. — *-hād*  
 203. 263. — *-regol* 217. 264.  
*munustiri* 205.  
*mynece* (*-e*, *-u*) 179. 179 n. 180. 201.  
 204. 257.  
*mynster* 205. 257. — *-fæmne* 206 n.  
 264. — *-mann* 204. 206. 206 n.  
 263. — *-munuc* 205. 206. 264.

*-nes* 18.  
 Nightrail 219.  
*nā(w)-cumena* (*sē*) 202. 262. — *nā(w)-*  
*-cumend* 202. 262. — *nāw-* (*nāg-*,  
*nī-*) *cumen mann* 202. 262.  
*nonna* 179.  
 Northumbrian-Mercian expressions  
 5. 6. 8. 9. 13. 14. 15. 25 n. 28 n.  
 34 n. 2. 44. 49. 50 n. 62. 65. 77.  
 133 n. 1. 163. 188 n. 1. 229. 241.  
 267.  
 Novice 202. — *novitia*, *novitius* 202.  
 Nun 179. 179 n. 180. 181. 201. —  
 Consecration of — 204.  
*nunne* 179. 180. 181. 201. 259. 265.  
*ofer-brædan* 221. — *ofer-brædels* 221.  
 260. — *ofer-hacele* 236. 260. —  
*ofer-slype* (*-slip*, *-slop*) 225. 260.  
*officium* 196.  
*olmusa* 26.  
*ōmbeht* v. *āmbeht*.  
*oncrae* (v. *āncor*) 183 n. 1. 267.  
*orarium* 228.  
*oratio* 173. 258. 265.  
 Ordain 83. 123 n. 1, 2.  
 Orders (of priesthood) 124.  
*ordinatio* 123 n. 1.  
 Ordination 82. 123 n. 1.  
*ordines majores* 115. 116. 170. —  
*minores* 116. 171.  
*ordo* 123 n. 1.  
*ostiarus* 116. 175.  
 Oxford Dictionary 10 n. 2. 16 n. 2.  
 32 n. 1, 2, 3. 84 n. 152 n. 178 ft. n.  
 223 n. 224 n. 234 n. 236 n.  
*paenula* 233.  
*pāfe* 125.  
 Paganism 16. 17. 17 n. 1. 18.  
*paganismus* 16. — *paganus*, *-i* 9. 10.  
 10 n. 2. — *pagus* 9.  
 Pall 137. 239—241.  
*pallium* 137. 138. 220. 239. 239 n. 1.  
 241. 258. — *onfōn* 137. 150.  
*pāpa* 125. 258.  
 Papacy 128.  
 Papal See 128.

*pāp-dōm* 128. 263.  
*pāpe* 125.  
*pāp-hād* 128. 263. — *pāp-setl (-sēld)* 128. 263.  
*papyrus* 171.  
*parish* 55. 163. — *Parishioner* 55. 55 n.  
*parochia* 55. 163.  
*passio* 65. 71. 72. 72 n.  
*pastor* 115.  
*pater* 125. — *monasterii* 194.  
*pati* 73.  
*Patriarch* 41. 41 n. 42. 142. — *patriarcha* 41. 142. 258.  
*pæll* (*pell*, *pelle*) 239. 239 n. 1, 2. 258.  
*pænig* (*penig*) 256.  
*pecunia sepulturae* 251.  
*pell*, *pelle* v. *pæll*.  
*penig* v. *pænig*.  
*Peter's Pence* 254.  
*phares* 4 n. 1.  
*Pharisaeus*, -i 4. 4 n. 1. 5.  
*Pharisees* 4. 5.  
*Phariseisc*, *Pharisēus* etc. v. *Far*.  
*pistol* 258. — *rædere* 170. 263. 265.  
*planeta* 230.  
*Plow Alms* 253. 254 ft. n.  
*pluviale* 233.  
*Pogatscher*, *Pref.* 92. 98. 99. 100. 101. 102. 109 n. 1. 133. 133 n. 1. 183 n. 2. 222. 234 n.  
*pontifex* 5. 141. 143. 154.  
*Pope* 125—128.  
*populus* 12. 146 n. 2. — *spirifualis* 94.  
*portarius* 207.  
*postol* (cf. *apostol*) 44. 258. 267. — *postole* 44. — *postul* 44 n.  
*praebere* 100. — *\*praebester* 98. 100. — *\*praebiter*, *praebitor* 100.  
*praefectus* 195.  
*praelatus* 55. 195.  
*praepositura* 148. 196. 199. — *praepositus* 101. 102. 195.  
*praesagus* 36.  
*prāfost* (*prāfast*, *prāvost*; *prōfast*, *prōfost*) 195. 257. — *-folgōð* 196. — *-scīr* 148. 196.  
*prēast* (v. *prēost*, *mæsse-prēost*) 267.

*precursor (Christi)* 78.  
*\*preost* 101. 102.  
*prēost* (*priost*, *prēst*) 97. 98. 99. 101. 102. 103. 104. 104 n. 105. 106. 107. 114. 155. 178. 180. 257. — *-hād* 119. 263. — *-heap* 120. 263. 265. — *hired* 122. 263. 265. — *-lic* 107. 257. — *-scīr* 163. 263.  
*presbyter* 97. 98. 99. 100. 101. 102. 104. 105. 106. 155. 158. 159. 176. — *presbyteratus* 160. — *presbyter domesticus* 164.  
*prēst* (cf. *prēost*) 100. 101. 102. 114.  
*prēstar*, *prestre* 103.  
*prete* 100.  
*prevost* 101.  
*priast*, *priastar* 103.  
*Priest* v. *Clergyman*; (heathen-) v. *æwe-wéard*, *biscop*, *Goda*, *sācerd*; (= *presbyter*, *mass-priest*) 106. 116. 155—165.  
*priestar* 103.  
*Priesthood* 116—123. 123 n. 1. 160.  
*prima signatio* 22 n. 2. 75.  
*princeps* 140. — *praepositus* 197. — *sacerdotum* 5.  
*principatus* 192.  
*prior* 100. 101. 102. 190. 197 ft. n. — *conventualis* 190.  
*Prioress* 193. 194.  
*priost* (v. *prēost*) 268. — *prioste* 102.  
*prius* 99. 100.  
*procuratio* 148.  
*prōfast* v. *prāfost*.  
*prōfenda* 26.  
*prōfost* v. *prāfost*.  
*Prophecy* 39.  
*propheta* 37. 38. 258. — *προφήτης* 37.  
*Prophetess* 36. — *Prophets* 36—39.  
*propositus* 101. 195.  
*provende* 26.  
*provincia* 196.  
*Provost* 195. 196.  
*puella* 34. 34 n. 1.  
*-raca* 45 n. — *racu* 45 n. 74.  
*Rational*, *rationale* 244. 258.

Raumer, Pref.

*rædan* 174.

*rædenn* 30. 214.

*rædere, rædestre* 174. 260.

Reader 174.

*reaf* 219.

*ge-ræfa* 195.

*regol (reogol)* 195. 256. — *-wéard* 195. 263.

*regula* 195.

*rehtwísendlíc* 7.

*Reich* 138.

Relic 84. 85. 88. 90.

*religio* 23.

*reliquiae* 88. — *reliquias, e* 90. 258.

*reogol* v. *regol*.

Revenues of the Church 245—262.

*rice* 138.

*riht canonicus* 180. 263. — *-wísend* (= Sadducee) 7. 260.

*rinnan* 78.

*Römaskatr* 254.

Romance borrowings in O. E., Pref.

*Römfeoh* 254. 263.

*Röm-pærniġ (-peniġ)* 254. 263. — *-scot* 254. 263.

*Rümskattr* 248. 254.

*rusticus* 9. 10 n. 1.

*rynel* 78.

*sacart* 109 n. 1.

*sācerd* 109. 109 n. 1, 2. 110. 117 and ft. n. 153 n. 258. — *-hād* 117. 263.

*sacerdos* 104. 104 n. 109. 143. 154. — *-domesticus* 164. — *sacerdotas* 109 n. 2. 265. — *sacerdotium* 117. 119. 160.

*sācer-hād* 117 n.

*sacramentum* 86.

*Sadducaeus* 7.

*Sadduceas (Sadducie, ða Sadduce-iscan, Sadducēi)* 7. 258.

Sadducees 7.

*sagen* 36.

Saints 79. 79 n. 81.

*salus* 79 n.

*samanunga* 28.

*Samaringas* 8. 258. 267.

*Samaritān* 8 n. 1. — *-isc* 8. 258.

Samaritans 8.

*samnaðr* 28.

*ge-samning, -ung* v. *ge-somnung*.

*samnunga* 28.

*sanct (-a, -e)* 81. 258.

*sanctimonia* 85. — *sanctimonialis* 179. 201. — *sanctimonium* 84.

*sanctitas* 84.

*sanctuarium* 84. 87. 88.

Sanctuary 60. 84. 87.

*sanctum* 88. — *sanctus* 79. 79 n. 81. 258.

*sāngere (sóngere)* 177. 260.

*sarabaita, Sarabaite* 205.

*sāwl-sceatt, -scot* 251. 251 n. 262.

(*ge*)-*sālig* 260.

Scapular, *scapulare, scapularia* 237.

*scaz* 248.

*sceare onfōn* 95. 204. — *scearu* 94. 260.

*sceatt* 248.

*sceawian* 144.

*sceotan* 251 n.

*schauen* 144.

Schmidt 179 n.

*schreiben* 161.

*schreiten* 205.

*Schrift* 161.

*-scipe* 17.

*scīr* 147. 148. 163. 196. 260. — *scīra* 148. — *scīrebiscop* 147. 263.

(*ge*)-*scoren* *bēon* 95.

(*ge*)-*scot* 251 n.

*scriba* 6. — *scriban, scribere* 161. — Scribes 6. — *scriban* 161.

*scriðul* 205.

*scrīfan* 161. 162. 256.

*script* 161. 162. 256. — *-bōc* 161. 162. 263. — *-scīr* 163. 263. — *-spræc* 162. 263.

*scrīn* 91. 256. — *scrīni, scrinium* 91.

*scripta* 161.

*scrītan* 205.

*scrūd* 219.

*scūldorhrægl* 221. 262.

*sedes* 128. — *apostolica* 128. —  
*archiepiscopalis* 139.  
*Seiler* 10.  
*senior* 140. 159. 197 ft. n. — *seniores*  
*populi* 5.  
*seonod* (*sionod*, *synod*, *sinod*, *senod*)  
 33. 259.  
*separatus* 4 n. 1.  
*serc*, *seric* v. *syrice*.  
*sermo* 37.  
*Sexton* 176.  
*Shrift* 161.  
*Shrine* 91.  
*Shrive* 161.  
*singularis* 4 n. 1.  
*sinod* v. *seonod*.  
*skattr*, *skatts* 243.  
*Skeat* 10. 75. 92.  
*σκέπτω* 144.  
*skrifra* 161. — *skrift* 161.  
*skrin* 91.  
*skript*, *skriva* 161.  
*slip*, *slop* (*skype*), *slūpan* 225.  
*societas* 30. 123.  
*solitarius* 184.  
*Somner* 42 n. 2.  
*(ge-)somnung* (*-ing*, *gesamning*) 24.  
 28. 28 n. 29. 214. 260.  
*sóngere* v. *sångere*.  
*sorores* (*monasterii*) 208.  
*Soul-shot* 251.  
*spel(l)* 37. 46. — *-boda* 37. 43. 46. 260. —  
*gespelja* 127. 130. — *spelizend* 127.  
*stol* 229. 258. 267.  
*stola* 228. 229.  
*Stole* 228. — *stole* 228. 258.  
*Subdeacon* 116. 170.  
*subdiacon* 170. 258.  
*subditus* 49. 50. 55.  
*subjectus* 50. 55.  
*subjugare* 60.  
*sudarium* 228.  
*Suffragan* 146. 146 n. 1, 2. 147. —  
*suffraganeus* 143. 146.  
*sulhælmesse* 253. 263.  
*súndor* (*súnder-*) *-genga* 4 n. 1. —  
*-hálga* 4. 4 n. 1. 262.

*suntirlebin* 4 n. 1.  
*Superhumeral* 232. — *superhumerales*  
 221. 232.  
*superpelliceum* 225.  
*Surplice* 225; cf. 232.  
*Sweet* 45 n. 109 n. 1. 234 n.  
*sweostor* (*-tra*, *-tru*) 208. 260.  
*swic*, *swican* 14.  
*sylf-dema* 205. 206. 262.  
*symbolum animae* 251.  
*synagoga* 28 n. 216.  
*Synagogue* 28. 216.  
*synodus* 33.  
*synod* v. *seonod*.  
*syrice* (*seric*, *serc*) 222.

*τὰ ἔθνη* 9. 13.  
*tapor* 171. — *-berend* 171. 263.  
*Taranger*, Pref. 42 n. 2. 146 ft. n.  
*taufen* 10.  
*τέκνον* 61.  
*teoda* 247. 260. — *-sceatt* 247. 248.  
*(ge-)teodian* 247. 260.  
*teodung* (*-ing*) 246. 260. 262. — *-ealdor*  
 197. 198. 260. — *-sceatt* 249.  
*τίκτω* 61.  
*Tithes* 245—249.  
*tonsi* 94.  
*Tonsure* 94. 95.  
*tribunus* 113.  
*tribus* 13.  
*tunece* (*tunice*, *tonice*) 220. 222. 258.  
*túngol-witga* 40. 262.  
*Tunic* 222.  
*tunica alba* 224. — *Dalmatica* 223. —  
*serica* 222.

*ūdwuta* 5. 6. 260. 267.  
*Ulfilas* v. *Wulfilas*.  
*unbiscopod* (*unbiscopod*) 151.  
*únder-diacon* 170. 263.  
*únderþeodd(a)* 49. 50. 60. 260. — *-an* 60.  
*únderþiēdda*, *únderþiēdda* v. *únder-*  
*þeodd(a)*.  
*Varnhagen* 100. 101. 102.  
*vates diabolicus* 40.  
*velamen monialium* 204.

